

DUTCH REFERENCE GRAMMAR

B. C. Donaldson

B.A. (Hons), Litt. drs.



Martinus Nijhoff / 's-Gravenhage, 1981

Contents

© 1981 Martinus Nijhoff bv, The Hague, The Netherlands

ISBN 90 247 2354 x

Niets uit deze uitgave mag worden verveelvoudigd en/of openbaar gemaakt door middel van druk, fotokopie, microfilm of op welke andere wijze ook, zonder voorafgaande schriftelijke toestemming van de uitgever.

No part of this book may be reproduced in any form, by print, photoprint, microfilm or any other means without written permission from the publisher.

Preface	8
Acknowledgements	11
Abbreviations	12
1 Pronunciation	13
2 Spelling	14
3 Punctuation	18
4 Cases	20
5 Articles	21
6 Demonstratives	26
7 Nouns	27
Rules for the gender of Dutch nouns	27
Plural of nouns	33
Feminising masculine agents	41
Possession	42
Diminutives	43
Proper nouns	see Appendix 2
8 Pronouns	50
Personal pronouns	50
Possessive pronouns	58
Reflexive pronouns	see Reflexive verbs
Demonstrative pronouns	61
Relative pronouns	62
Indefinite pronouns	68
Interrogative pronouns	72
9 Adjectives	74
Rules for inflection	74
The comparative of the adjective	77
The superlative of the adjective	79
Adjectives used only predicatively or attributively	80
Predicative adjectives followed by prepositions	81
Adjectives used as nouns	84
Formation of adjectives	84
Notes on some peculiarities of adjectives	90

10	Adverbs	92
	Comparative and superlative of adverbs	92
	Intensifying adverbs	94
	Adverbs of time	95
	Adverbs of place and direction	106
	Interrogative adverbs	109
	Formation of adverbs	110
11	Verbs	112
	Formation of tenses	112
	Use of tenses	121
	Alphabetical list of strong and irregular verbs	125
	Mixed verbs	136
	Irregular verbs	136
	<i>Hebben</i>	137
	<i>Zijn</i>	139
	Uses of the verb <i>zijn</i>	141
	Model auxiliary verbs	146
	The infinitive	154
	The imperative mood	158
	The subjunctive mood	160
	The passive	161
	Progressive or continuous tenses	165
	Emphatic present and imperfect tenses formed with 'to do'	166
	The present participle	166
	How to render English '-ing' forms in Dutch	168
	Reflexive verbs	171
	Transitive and intransitive verbs	177
	Impersonal verbs	178
	Verbal prefixes	179
	Separable verbs	180
	Inseparable verbs	182
	Verbs followed by prepositional objects	185
12	Conjunctions	190
	Co-ordinating conjunctions	190
	Subordinating conjunctions	192
	Adverbial conjunctions	199
	Correlative conjunctions	199
	Conjunctions introducing infinitive clauses	201
	Interrogative adverbs and pronouns introducing indirect questions	203
13	Prepositions	205
	Prepositional phrases	217
	Notes on prepositions	219

14	Numerals	222
	Cardinal numbers	222
	Ordinal numbers	225
	Fractions	227
	Arithmetic/calculation	228
	Temperature	228
	Age	228
	Money	229
	Time	230
	Dates	231
	Weights	232
	Measurements	233
	Playing cards	234
15	Er	235
16	Negation	239
	Appendix 1 – Letter writing	244
	Appendix 2 – Proper nouns	248
	Countries, inhabitants, nationalities, adjectives, languages	
	Geographical names	
	Historical personages	
	Appendix 3 – Common Dutch abbreviations	260
	Index	265
	Recommended texts for further reference	275

Preface

Behind this book lie years of frustration, firstly as a student of Dutch and later as a teacher of the language, at the lack of an advanced grammar for the English-speaking student. Advanced text-books of many of the world's languages that have fewer speakers than Dutch have been written for the Anglo-Saxon student. I have always considered it indicative of the Dutch lack of pride and interest in their language that none of them has endeavoured to fill this gap, and there have probably been too few non-native-speakers proficient enough in the language to do so – a result of there never having been a satisfactory grammar perhaps?

Nederländsk Grammatik by J. de Rooy and I. Wikén Bonde (Språkförlaget, 1971) is the only book I know which presents Dutch grammar in anything like the detail that I do here for the foreign student of the language. I am indebted to the said book which I used on numerous occasions to monitor the completeness of my own grammar.

This book, lacking any predecessor upon which to improve, will undoubtedly have many shortcomings, but a beginning had to be made somewhere at some time by someone. Any constructive criticism on any aspect of the book at all will be most welcome. Perhaps future editions will then contain fewer imperfections.

There is also a lack of an advanced course book for Dutch and when the present work was first conceived, I was at odds whether to make it a course book or a reference grammar. On reflection I decided that a reference grammar was more urgent, particularly because a reference work can, with a little effort, be used as an advanced course book, whereas the reverse is not possible. It is hoped, however, that in the future a supplement of exercises geared to specific paragraphs in the grammar will appear. The present work will then go a lot further in fulfilling the demand for an advanced course book as well.

This reference grammar is aimed at the tertiary and upper secondary student as well as at the private student who has a thorough knowledge of grammatical terminology and whose knowledge has already gone beyond what the existing grammars offer. It is not intended to replace the existing beginners' grammars, except perhaps in the case of a student with some prior knowledge who simply wishes to consolidate that knowledge, but it is intended to complement those grammars. There are several very good reference grammars of Dutch for native-speakers of the language (see p. 275) but these are not enough. Firstly the gap between the beginners' grammars and these Dutch grammars is enormous and secondly the approach is simply not the right one for anyone with an imperfect knowledge of Dutch. At that level certain contrasts with the mother-tongue are still necessary; the student is still in need of a degree of prescription whereas the Dutch reference grammars are all *descriptive*.

The conflict between prescription and description necessitates a certain explanation. It was not possible, nor indeed desirable, to describe every detail of the spoken and written language. I have endeavoured to *prescribe* forms which I know to be generally acceptable in both the spoken and written languages of the Netherlands. If at any stage I have mentioned spoken forms which are not acceptable in writing, or written forms which are not usual in the spoken language, this has been either clearly stated in each instance or the abbreviations 'coll.' for colloquial, 'arch.' for archaic or 'lit.' for literary have been used. I make no apology for being quite strongly prescriptive at times, although I am aware that some will find forms I don't recommend quite acceptable; there comes a point where the foreign student is not helped by being offered a whole series of alternatives without any recommendation for one form or another. Historical explanation of grammatical forms has been kept to a bare minimum and has only been given where I deemed it necessary for the student's understanding of the particular point, eg. *gij* versus *jij*.

Belgian usage has been scarcely considered at all; to have done so would have rendered certain sections of the book rather unwieldy and in the interests of standardisation and prescription it seemed to me desirable to stick to current usage in the Netherlands, all the more so as the current trend in Belgium seems to be to follow the north in language issues.

My approach to grammar is a conventional one. Objective classification and consistency in lay-out are imperative for a book like this to be successful. I feel that by keeping to the categories the student is likely to be acquainted with from his other language studies, the information will be more readily accessible to the majority who make use of it. The contents of this book are only accessible to the student who has a thorough knowledge of the traditional categories of grammar; this is after all the only classification that is international enough to give the work currency wherever it may be used in the world.

Countries with mother-tongues other than English, in particular Germany, now have numerous tertiary institutions teaching Dutch and they suffer from an even greater lack of suitable texts for learning the language. Although my approach has been entirely from the point of view of a native-speaker of English, I feel and hope that most of the material will be of equal validity for native-speakers of other languages, and that this book might find currency in those countries until such time as a similar work appears in those languages. The wide-spread knowledge of English among European youth these days should facilitate access to the information contained in the book.

It will be noticed that each new section of grammar gives the Dutch name for that particular grammatical category. My motivation was the following: if one of the functions of this book is to bridge the gap between the existing beginners' grammars and the reference grammars for native-speakers, the student needs to know what the concept is called in Dutch in order to be able to go directly to the relevant section of such works.

The many examples used throughout the book to illustrate the grammatical points

have purposely been kept as simple and everyday as possible, so much so that at times translation did not seem to be necessary.

Although the categories used are, on the whole, internationally recognised, there are inevitably some idiosyncracies in my classifications, for example possessive adjectives will be found under pronouns and proper nouns appear in an appendix rather than in the chapter on nouns. For this reason I advise the reader to fully acquaint himself with the system by firstly paging through the entire book. Then, with the aid of the contents and the index, he should have little trouble in being able to refer quickly to any point of grammar.

I feel at this point a word of explanation is necessary about the numerous lists in the book. Some readers may feel that some of these lists are simply duplicating the dictionaries, but, having attempted to weed much of the information from dictionaries to compile these lists, I can assure them that the dictionaries are usually inadequate. For example, no Dutch reference work gives a satisfactory list of countries and nationalities and the Dutch themselves simply do not know, or are not sure, what an inhabitant of Zaïre is called, to mention but one instance. Many hours of frustrating interviewing and collating of varying opinions went into the compilation of that list alone.

Other lists contain information that is indeed to be found in dictionaries, but not of course in this format. For example, the adverbial expressions of time will nearly all be found as separate entries in any dictionary, but by attempting to bring them all together and listing them under key words, the student will learn so much more about the formation of such expressions by looking them up in this grammar than he will by seeking them in a dictionary.

Other lists are not intended so much for reference as for trying to illustrate certain concepts in Dutch. For example, prepositions could have been tackled in two ways: either I could have taken English prepositions one by one and illustrated the various ways they are rendered in Dutch, but this would in my opinion, have been unwieldy and of little practical use; or alternatively I could have taken and did indeed take Dutch prepositions one by one and listed as many everyday idiomatic uses of each I could think of. In this way I hope the student, while not being able to use the list for reference exactly, will however be able to acquire a feeling for the usage of each of these idiomatic little words.

My treatment of all non-regular verbs also requires a little explanation. I have classified all such verbs as either strong, mixed, modal or irregular. For facility's sake and to assist the student with an historical linguistic background, strong verbs have all been assigned to the original *Ablautreihe* to which they belong. On p. 125-127 there is an alphabetical list of very non-regular verb which tells the reader which *Ablautreihe* or other category the verb belongs to. Then on pages 128-135 the reader can look up the tenses of that verb under the category designated on p. 125-127.

Finally it will be noticed that there is no one chapter devoted to syntax (word-order), for which I expect some criticism. All attempts to formalise the extremely complex issue of word-order that I have seen in Dutch and German grammars fail

miserably. I found myself unable to write a chapter on syntax that would be practical for reference and that would not involve unnecessary repetition of issues dealt with elsewhere in the book. For this reason I finally opted for an entry entitled 'syntax' in the index which refers the reader to all issues of word-order as and where they occur in the description of the grammar.

Bruce C. Donaldson
University of Melbourne, Dec. 1980

Acknowledgements

My thanks are due to Prof. W.Z. Shetter of Indiana University, Bloomington and Dr. H.C. Wekker of Nijmegen University for their thorough reading of the manuscript and for the many valuable corrections and additions they suggested. I would similarly like to thank a post-graduate student of mine, Ms. J. Bennett, and Ms. R. van Eck from Martinus Nijhoff for their reading of the text.

Thanks are also due to my employer, the University of Melbourne, which provided me with six months study-leave in 1977 during which time a start was made on the writing of this book and without which time the initial ice may never have been broken. In addition the Faculty of Arts at Melbourne University made a considerable sum of money available for typing and assistance with the compilation of the index. This money was gratefully received.

The former secretaries of the Department of Germanic Studies, Mrs. V. Denman and Mrs. A. Heineke-Sieuwerds, must be thanked for the laborious hours they spent typing and retyping the manuscript.

Finally I wish to express my gratitude to Ms. C. McLiesh who, in her capacity as student research assistant, compiled the index, the backbone of any reference work.

B. C. D.

Melbourne, December 1980

Abbreviations

arch. — archaic
c. — common gender
coll. — colloquial
fig. — figurative
lit. — literary

n. — neuter
pej. — pejorative
s.o. — someone
s.t. — something

1 Pronunciation (*uitspraak*)

It is assumed that anyone using this book is acquainted with the basics of Dutch pronunciation and thus they are not dealt with here. Students requiring detailed information on assimilation, stress and other aspects of pronunciation are advised to consult R.H.B. De Coninck *Groot Uitspraakwoordenboek van de Nederlandse Taal*, Uitgeverij De Nederlandsche Boekhandel, Antwerpen, 1970.

2 Spelling (*spelling*)

As with the pronunciation, it is assumed that the reader has grasped the essentials of the highly phonetic spelling of Dutch and that there is no need to repeat them here. In case of doubt on any point, the reader is referred to pages XXXV to LI of *Woordenlijst van de Nederlandse Taal – samengesteld in opdracht van de Nederlandse en de Belgische regering*, Martinus Nijhoff, 1954.

The following complications of spelling are covered in great detail in the *Woordenlijst* on the pages given. Only those uses which differ from English and are thus not dealt with in the *Woordenlijst* are mentioned here.

Acute and grave accents

The numerous French loan words written with accents in that language usually retain those accents in Dutch.

café, à, Française

Note, however, that diminutives of words ending in *-é* no longer require the accent.

café – cafeetje, logé(e) – logeetje

Words of French origin ending in *-ée* drop the accent in Dutch:

orchidee, marechaussee

Words beginning with *é* also drop the accent:

etage, etalage

The acute (´) and grave (`) are otherwise used on *Dutch* words for emphasis where in an English text we would normally underline the word or print it in bold type. The grave is usually used only on the letter *e* but is occasionally found on other vowels. The acute also often replaces the grave in such cases; there seems to be little consistency here.

Een tè behoudende koers – A **too** conservative approach

Werklozen èn studenten – The unemployed **and** students or Both the unemployed and students

Dit woord wordt gewoonlijk zònder, maar ook wel mèt klemtoon gesproken – This word is usually pronounced **without**, but sometimes **with** stress

In the sentence *Je doet het, hè?* – ‘You’re doing it, aren’t you?’ the grave reflects the pronunciation and distinguishes the word *hè* (*niet waar*) from *hé* (*hey*).

The acute is used on all other vowels for emphasis. Notice the difference in meaning it gives to the following words:

een – a, *één* – one; *voor* – for, *vóór* – in front of, before

Even when these two words have the second meaning they are written with accents only when the meaning could be ambiguous, otherwise they are left off.

om een uur – at one o’clock

een van mijn vrienden – one of my friends

er staat een boom voor het huis – there is a tree in front of the house

but

er staat een boom vóór het huis, niet erachter – there is a tree in front of the house, not behind it

Sometimes the accents are used on other words to avoid ambiguity:

vèrstrekkend – far-reaching

verstrekkend – issuing, supplying

Apostrophe (*het weglatingsteken*) p. LXVII

Unlike English, the apostrophe is not used to show possession.

Jans boek, mijn moeders auto

Only when the proper noun ends in *a, o, u, s* or *z* is the apostrophe used:

Hans’ boek, Helma’s woordenboek

The abbreviated forms of *ik, het, mijn, zijn* etc. using an apostrophe are best avoided in writing except in certain standard expressions:

met z’n drieën, op z’n Nederlands (always abbreviated in these two cases)

ik heb ’t koud, over ’t algemeen (commonly abbreviated)

Capital letters (*hoofdletters*) pp. LXVIII-LXX

The Dutchman regards the diphthong *ij* as one letter (it is a separate key on a typewriter, for example) and thus if a word starts with *ij* and has to be capitalised, both the *i* and the *j* are affected.

Het IJ, het IJsselmeer

In Dutch family names with *van, den* and *der* one usually writes such particles separately and small letters are used when a christian name, initials or title precedes.

de heer van den Berg
H. van der Molen

When the christian name, initial or title are not mentioned a capital letter is used.

de brief van Van den Berg
We hebben het over De Bruijn

Note: When looking up a name in a Dutch telephone book or bibliography, it is written as follows:
Berg, H. van den.

'Mr.' and 'Mrs.' are always written with small letters in Dutch (see p. 00 for one notable exception):

meneer Smit, mevrouw Aantjes

Note on *meneer/de heer*: (see also p. 24 and p. 244)

When a man is addressed directly, *meneer* precedes his name. If he is being talked about, however, *de heer* will usually precede his name rather than *meneer*; this is particularly the case in formal style.

It will be noticed that in some avant-garde publications (student newspapers, some modern literature etc.) adjectives of nationality are often written with small letters, eg. *nederlands, amsterdams*. The *voorkeurspelling*, as used in the *Woordenlijst*, does not support this, however.

Hyphen (*het koppelteken*) pp. LXIV-LXV

The hyphen is not as common in Dutch as in English because the rules for compound words are on the whole more clearly defined than in English. For example, hesitation about 'kitchen-door' or 'kitchen door', 'racing-car' or 'racing car' does not arise in Dutch, i.e. *keukendeur, raceauto* etc.

It is, however, commonly used when listing compound nouns that share a component of the compound.

maag-, hoofd- en kiespijn – stomach, head and tooth-ache
voor- en namiddag – morning and afternoon
matrozenuitdrukkingen en -vloeken – seamen's expressions and curses

Diaeresis (*het deeltteken, de trema*) p. LXVI

Medial sounds in compound words (*tussenklanken in samenstellingen*) pp. LVI-LXIII

i.e. *kippevel, kippenhok, kinderzegel, broekspijp*

Syllabic division (*verdeling van woorden in lettergrepen*) pp. LII-LV

New trends in spelling

Nowadays many foreign words are being written according to the rules of Dutch phonetics:

cadeau – *kado/kadootje*
niveau – *nivo*
historisch – *histories*

Until such time as the *Woordenlijst* has been revised and gives the seal of approval to such spellings one is advised to follow the *voorkeurspelling*, i.e. the traditional spelling as recommended in the *Woordenlijst*.

3 Punctuation (*interpunctie, leestekens*)

Generally speaking Dutch punctuation does not differ greatly from that of English. Only the comma is used somewhat differently – usually more sparingly than in English – and thus only the comma is dealt with here. For a complete account of Dutch punctuation see H.M. Hermkens, *Spelling en Interpunctie*, Malmberg, Den Bosch.

The Comma (*de komma*)

Only those uses that differ from English are dealt with here.

3.1 It may be used between two adjectives before a noun when no conjunction is used (see p. 91), as in English, but it is also often omitted in such cases; it is, however, always used when three or more adjectives precede the noun.

een koude(,) natte avond

but

een koude, natte en stormachtige avond

3.2 When a subordinate clause precedes a main clause in a compound sentence, a comma is usually used to separate the verbs:

Als je het morgen doet, krijg je iets van me

Omdat hij zo laat thuisgekomen was, was zijn vrouw boos op hem

Ik blijf thuis en omdat ik me misselijk voel, ga ik onmiddellijk naar bed

When the main clause precedes a subordinate clause introduced by *dat*, the comma is often omitted; with other conjunctions the comma is always used.

Ik geloof dat hij morgen komt

Ik heb de pan aan mijn moeder gegeven, hoewel ik er zelf geen had

3.3 With relative clauses a comma is always used at the end of the clause but seldom before it (although it is sometimes found with longer relative clauses).

De man die in dat huis woont, is mijn oom

De universiteit(,) die later in het jaar een aantal nieuwe cursussen graag had willen invoeren, heeft besloten dat dat niet meer mogelijk zal zijn

The following subtle difference in meaning when the first comma is omitted or used should be noted: with a comma the relative clause relates back to the entire group whereas without a comma it relates back to only a section of the group.

Die jongens die te laat waren, moesten schoolblijven

i.e. There were other boys and perhaps girls who were not late.

De jongens, die te laat waren, moesten schoolblijven

i.e. There were only boys and all had to stay behind.

3.4 Note that the following English commas which merely indicate a reading pause within a clause are not used in Dutch:

It is, however, very difficult –

Het is echter erg moeilijk

He has, unfortunately, not done it –

Hij heeft het helaas niet gedaan

3.5 See p. 223 (footnote) and 229.

4 Cases (*naamvallen*)

Case, once so prevalent in Dutch – especially in the written language – is to all intents and purposes dead nowadays. Remnants of the cases will still be found chiefly in standard expressions, official titles and occasionally in very formal writing. Articles, demonstratives, possessives, adjectives and nouns can all be affected by case (see the relevant chapters).

It is traditional in English-speaking countries to refer to the four cases in the following order: nominative (subject case), accusative (direct object case), genitive (possessive case) and dative (indirect object). In Holland, however, the classical order used in the learning of Latin and Greek is more common, i.e. nominative, genitive, dative and accusative. This has resulted in the Dutch naming the cases after their number in the above sequence, i.e. nominative – *de eerste naamval*, genitive – *de tweede naamval* etc.

Some common expressions preserving archaic case endings are given below to illustrate the concept; the number is actually infinite. Only the genitive and the dative, apart from the nominative of course, are recognisable nowadays:

Expressions preserving the genitive:

<i>wiens hoed, wier jurk</i>	whose hat, whose dress
<i>'s middags</i>	in the afternoon
<i>blootshoofds</i>	bare-headed
<i>desnoods</i>	in case of need
<i>het teken des kruises</i>	the sign of the cross
<i>'s lands wijs, 's lands eer</i>	when in Rome, ...
<i>het Leger des Heils</i>	the Salvation Army
<i>in naam der wet</i>	in the name of the law
<i>Ambassade der Nederlanden</i>	Embassy of the Netherlands

Expressions preserving the dative:

<i>ter wille van</i> (see p. 218)	for the sake of
<i>ten einde raad</i>	at one's wits' end
<i>tenslotte</i>	finally
<i>op heter daad</i>	red-handed
<i>op den duur</i>	in the long run
<i>van ganser harte</i>	from the bottom of one's heart
<i>om den brode</i>	for a living

5 Articles (*lidwoorden*)

The indefinite article (*het onbepaald lidwoord*)

The indefinite article 'a, an' in English is *een* in Dutch which is pronounced 'n and sometimes written as such in direct speech. The numeral 'one' is also *een*, pronounced with a long *e* and written *één* when ambiguity can arise (see p. 15 and p. 223). Occasionally in standard expressions and archaic style older case forms of *een* are found.

enerzijds – on the one hand

het leed ener moeder – the sorrow of a mother

Omission of the indefinite article

The indefinite article is sometimes omitted in Dutch where it is used in English.

- a it is often omitted after the preposition *als* (see p. 197):

Hij gebruikt zijn schoteltje als asbak

He's using his saucer as an ashtray

Ik doe Duits als bijvak

I'm doing German as a secondary subject.

- b it is commonly omitted after the preposition *zonder*:

Ik zag een man zonder hoofd

I saw a man without a head

Hij ging uit zonder hoed

He went out without a hat

- c it is usually omitted before professions, but always inserted when the profession is preceded by an adjective (when the verb is *zijn*, *worden* or *blijven*).

Ik ben leraar – I am a teacher

Ik ben een zeer goede leraar – I am a very good teacher

- d it is commonly omitted before nationalities, but always inserted when the nationality is preceded by an adjective (when the verb is *zijn*, *worden* or *blijven*).

Hij is (een) Nederlander – He is a Dutchman

Hij is een rasechte Nederlander – He is a genuine Dutchman

e it is omitted in various standard expressions:

Het was jammer – It was a pity
maag-, kiespijn enz. hebben/krijgen – to have/get a stomach-ache or tooth-ache etc.
oog om oog, tand om tand – an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth
kwart voor/over drie – a quarter to/past three

The definite article (*het bepaald lidwoord*)

The definite article used before singular common gender nouns is *de* and *het* is used before singular neuter nouns. Both genders employ *de* in the plural.

de man, de deur, het kind, het gat – *de mannen, de deuren, de kinderen, de gaten*

There are many remnants of former cases in the definite article (see p. 218). The most common are *der* (genitive singular feminine and plural), *des* or *'s* (genitive masculine and neuter singular) and *den* (dative masculine and neuter singular). Many case forms of the definite article have been preserved in standard expressions:

in de loop der tijd – in the course of time
Beatrix, Koningin der Nederlanden – Beatrix, Queen of the Netherlands
's morgens – in the morning
in naam des konings – in the name of the king
het Leger des Heils – the Salvation Army
op den duur – in the course of time

The genitive feminine singular and plural *der* in particular is still productive; it is, however, rather formal.

Omission of the definite article

In certain idioms the definite article is omitted where it is used in English:

aan tafel – at the table
op tafel – on the table
op kantoor – at the office
naar kantoor – to the office
op straat – in the street
op zolder – in the attic
in bad – in the bath
in huis – in the house
naar zee – to the seaside
aan zee – at the seaside
piano/gitaar enz. spelen – to play the piano/guitar etc.

ik ben van mening dat – I am of the opinion that
in naam van de koning – in the name of the king

It is also commonly omitted before nouns in apposition

Carter, president van de V.S., is op het ogenblik op staatsbezoek in Japan

Inclusion of the definite article

There are many more cases in which the definite article is used where it is not in English.

Some cases are situations where its use can be defined, others are individual idioms.

a it is always used before **certain abstract nouns**.

de mens – mankind
de natuur – nature
de liefde – love
de moderne kunst – modern art
de (Nederlandse) geschiedenis – (Dutch) history
de dood – death
het leven – life

De natuur is mysterieus
 Nature is mysterious
De belangrijkste gebeurtenis in de geschiedenis
 The most important event in history
Zo is het leven
 Such is life

b it is always used before **names of towns and countries** when they are preceded by adjectives.

het mooie Amsterdam – beautiful Amsterdam
het toenmalige Duitsland – Germany in those days

c it is always used before **seasons**.

in de lente – in spring
De winter in Australië is erg zacht
 Winter in Australia is very mild

d it is always used with **meals** after the prepositions *na* and *vóór*.

na/vóór het avondeten – after/before dinner
but: *Wat heb je voor ontbijt gehad?*
 What did you have for breakfast?

- e it is always used before the names of streets, parks and squares.

Ik woon in de Hoofdstraat.

I live in Main Street.

Hij woont op de Erasmusweg.

He lives in Erasmus Road.

Ze sliep in het Vondelpark.

She slept in Vondel Park.

Op het Waterlooplein.

At Waterloo Square.

- f religions and names of airlines are always preceded by the definite article.

Hij vloog met de KLM

He flew with KLM

Waar is het hoofdkantoor van de TWA?

Where is TWA's main office?

De Islam is een godsdienst uit het Midden-Oosten

Islam is a Middle Eastern religion

Het Christendom door de eeuwen heen

Christianity through the ages.

- g it is used after *Meneer* and *Mevrouw* when the profession (not the personal name) follows – usually a form of direct address.

Meneer de Voorzitter – Mr. Chairman

Mevrouw de Presidente – Madame President

Meneer de Kat – Mr. Cat (in a fairy-tale)

Sprookjes van Moeder de Gans – Fairy-tales of Mother Goose

- h it is used in various idioms.

in de stad – in town

naar de stad – to town

in de kerk – in church

in de gevangenis – in jail

aan de universiteit – at university

in de praktijk – in practice

onder de zeespiegel – under sea level

in het Duits – in German

uit het Frans vertalen – to translate from French

op het tweede net – on channel two (T.V.)

de school begint om... – school begins at...

in de tweede versnelling – in second gear

tussen de 12 en de 15 – between 12 and 15 (items or age)

over/onder de 50 – over/under 50 (items or age)

voor de lol – for fun

in het rood gekleed – dressed in red

de een na de ander – one after another, one by one

met de auto/tram etc. – by car, tram etc.

met de hand – by hand

de volgende keer – next time

op het eerste gezicht – at first sight

- i In Dutch it is not possible for one definite article to do service for two nouns that follow; the article should be repeated for each noun

om de hals en de handen – around the neck and hands

de melk en het brood waren duur – the milk and bread were expensive

6 Demonstratives (*aanwijzende voornaamwoorden*)

6.1 The demonstrative, like the definite article, varies according to the gender of the noun it precedes:

common gender:	<i>deze</i> – this	<i>die</i> – that
neuter gender:	<i>dit</i> – this	<i>dat</i> – that
plural (both genders):	<i>deze</i> – these	<i>die</i> – those

deze man – this man, *deze deuren* – these doors, *die leraar* – that teacher, *dat huis* – that house, *die huizen* – those houses

Note:

<i>de</i>		<i>het</i>	
<i>deze</i>	common gender and plural	<i>dit</i>	neuter singular
<i>die</i>		<i>dat</i>	

6.2 Other case forms of the demonstratives are found in standard expressions

<i>een dezer dagen</i>	– one of these days
<i>op 13 dezer</i>	– on the 13th of this month (in letters)
<i>destijds</i>	– at that time
<i>dientengevolge</i>	– as a result of that

The genitive form *diens* sometimes replaces the English possessive adjective 'his', see p. 58.

6.3 'The former' and 'the latter' are rendered in Dutch by *deze* and an archaic demonstrative *gene* which is also used in other contexts

Wij wonen aan deze zijde van de rivier, onze vrienden aan gene
We live on this side of the river, our friends on that (side)

6.4 The pronominal use of demonstratives is dealt with under pronouns, see p. 59.

7 Nouns (*zelfstandige naamwoorden*)

Gender (*geslacht*)

Dutch nouns know only two genders: common gender and neuter. The former is an amalgamation of what was formerly masculine and feminine. Only in some archaic case forms is any distinction between the two still made (see Definite article p. 22). In the south of Holland and in Belgium the difference between masculine and feminine is still heeded in the use of pronouns (see p. 54).

Dutch dictionaries usually indicate gender by placing an *m* (*mannelijk*), a *v* (*vrouwelijk*) or an *o* (*onzijdig*) after the noun.

Every new Dutch noun must be learnt together with the appropriate definite article. There are a few reasonably reliable rules for learning the gender of nouns but there are nevertheless many words which do not fit the rules and for which the gender simply has to be learnt by heart. The following is a list of rules, some hard and fast, others a little vague, to assist in learning genders.

7.1 Rules for the gender of Dutch nouns

7.1.1 COMMON GENDER NOUNS

The names of men and women:

de burgemeester (mayor), *de dochter* (daughter), *de moeder* (mother), *de penningmeesteres* (female treasurer), *de vader* (father), *de verpleger* (male nurse), *de verpleegster* (nurse), *de zoon* (son).

Exceptions: *het mens* (woman), *het wijf* (woman). Both are pejorative terms.

The names of most animals, including birds and fish:

de haring (herring), *de leeuw* (lion), *de mus* (sparrow).
(for exceptions see Neuter nouns, names of young animals)

The names of trees, flowers and fruit:

de anjer (carnation), *de eik* (oak), *de perzik* (peach)

The names of stones, considered as objects (see Neuter noun. minerals):

de baksteen (brick), *de diamant* (diamond), *de robijn* (ruby)

The names of days, months and seasons (except compounds with *jaar*)

The names of mountains and large rivers:

de Mont Blanc, *de Nijl* (Nile), *de Rijn* (Rhine), *de Vesuvius*

The names of objects whose names end in *-aard*, *-aar*, *-erd*:

de standaard (standard), *de lessenaar* (desk), *de mosterd* (mustard)

The names of tools or instruments, derived from verbs, and ending in *-el* and *-er*:

de beitel (chisel), *de sleutel* (key), *de gieter* (watering-can)

Words ending in *-em*, *-lm* and *-rm*:

de bezem (broom), *de helm* (helmet), *de term* (term), *de storm* (storm)

Exception: *het scherm* (screen)

Words ending in *-ing* and *-ling*:

de regering (government), *de leerling* (school student)

Most monosyllabic words derived from verbs:

de lach (laugh), *de loop* (walk, gait), *de val* (trap, fall), *de zucht* (sigh)

The names of letters of the alphabet:

de a, *de b*, *de c*

The names of figures (numerical symbols):

de een, *de zeven*, *de honderd*

The names of musical instruments:

de hobo (oboe), *de piano* (piano), *de viool* (violin)

Exceptions: *het spinet*, *het clavecimbel*

The names of virtues and vices:

de nijd (anger, envy), *de woede* (rage), *de genade* (mercy), *de liefde* (love)

Words with the suffix *-e*:

de kou(de) (cold), *de vrede* (peace), *de zonde* (sin)

Exception: *het einde* (end)

Words derived from adjectives, and with the suffix *-te*:

de duurte (expensiveness), *de hoogte* (height), *de lengte* (length)

Words ending in *-heid* and *-nis*:

de vrijheid (freedom), *de waarheid* (truth), *de gebeurtenis* (event), *de geschiedenis* (history)

Words ending in *-age*, *-ij*, *-ei*, *-ie*, *-iek*, *-teit* and *-theek*:

de plantage (plantation), *de batterij* (battery), *de pastei* (pie), *de harmonie* (harmony), *de fabriek* (factory), *de electriciteit* (electricity), *de bibliotheek* (library)

Exceptions: *het publiek* (public), *het schilderij* (painting)

Words ending in an unaccented *-(t)ie* and *-uw*:

Exceptions: *het concilie* (council), *het evangelie* (gospel), *het genie* (genius)

Adjectives used as nouns and referring to a person:

de rijke (rich one), *de verminkte* (crippled one), *de zieke* (sick one)

Words ending in *-schap* signifying a condition (see Neuter nouns, *-schap*):

de dronkenschap (drunkenness), *de verwantschap* (relationship), *de vriendschap* (friendship), *de zwangerschap* (pregnancy)

but also the following:

de boodschap (message), *de broederschap* (brotherhood), *de eigenschap* (quality), *de nalatenschap* (inheritance), *de wetenschap* (science)

7.1.2 NEUTER NOUNS

All diminutives:

het kindje (child), *het koekje* (biscuit)

All infinitives used as nouns:

het eten (food, eating), *het geven* (giving), *het werken* (working)

The names of young animals (except *de big* – piglet)

het kalf (calf), *het kuiken* (chicken), *het veulen* (foal)

A great number of minerals. This group includes

- a Stones, where the name denotes the matter in general, or is a collective noun (see Common gender nouns, names of stones)

het diamant (diamond), *het steen* (stone), *het kwarts* (quartz)

- b All well-known metals

het blik (tin), *het goud* (gold), *het koper* (copper), *het nikkel* (nickel), *het radium* (radium), *het staal* (steel), *het tin* (pewter), *het ijzer* (iron), *het zilver* (silver)

- c Other minerals

het asbest (asbestos), *het barium* (barium), *het erts* (ore), *het gips* (gypsum, plaster)

Exception: *de kalk* (calcium)

The names of countries and provinces (the article is only used when the name is qualified):

het mooie Australië, *het België van toen*, *het oude Friesland*

The names of cities and villages (including those which have *den* included in the name):

het fraaie Den Haag, *het mooie Amsterdam* (although *de Dam*)

Words ending in *-sel* (except nouns whose *-sel* is not a true suffix, eg. *de mossel* – mussel, *oksel* – armpit, *wissel* – postal note):

deksel (lid), *stelsel* (system), *verschijnsel* (phenomenon), *voedsel* (food)

Only collective nouns with the prefix *ge-* and suffix *-te*:

het gebergte (mountain range), *het gebladerte* (foliage), *het geboomte* (trees)

Collective nouns with the prefix *ge-* and no suffix:

het gebroed (brood), *het gepeupel* (populace, rabble)

Nouns formed from verbal stems beginning with the prefixes *be-*, *ge-*, *ont-*, *ver-*:

het belang (importance), *het gesprek* (conversation), *het ontbijt* (breakfast), *het verbod* (prohibition)

Exceptions: *de verkoop* (sale), *de uitverkoop* (sale), *de verhuur* (hiring out)

Adjectives ending in *-e* used as abstract nouns:

het goede (that which is good)

het kwade (that which is evil)

het genotene (that which has been enjoyed)

All colours:

het blauw (blue), *het groen* (green)

All words ending in *-um*:

het album (album), *het gymnasium* (grammar school)

Exception: *de datum* (date)

Most words ending in *-dom*:

het eigendom (property), *het Christendom* (Christianity), *het mensdom* (humanity)

Exceptions: *de adeldom* (nobility), *de ouderdom* (old age), *de rijkdom* (riches, wealth)

Words ending in *-schap* signifying a function (see Common gender nouns):

het priesterschap (priesthood), *het burgemeesterschap* (mayoralty), *het vaderschap* (fatherhood)

but also the following:

het graafschap (county), *het gezelschap* (company), *het gereedschap* (tools), *het landschap* (landscape), *het genootschap* (society)

All words ending in *-isme*:

het communisme, *het socialisme*, *het germanisme*

All words ending in *-aat* :

het internaat (boarding school), *het secretariaat* (secretariat), *het consulaat* (consulat), *het resultaat* (result)

Points of the compass :

het noorden (north), *het noordoosten* (north-east)

7.1.3 COMPOUND NOUNS

Compound nouns always take the gender of the last noun in the compound:

het ontbijt, de tafel – thus, *de ontbijttafel*.

The following are exceptions to this rule:

<i>de blik</i> (glance)	<i>het ogenblik</i> (moment)
<i>de draad</i> (wire)	<i>het prikkeldraad</i> (barbed wire)
<i>de hof</i> (court-yard)	<i>het kerkhof</i> (grave-yard)
<i>de kant</i> (side)	<i>het vierkant</i> (square)
<i>de stip</i> (dot, point)	<i>het tijdstip</i> (point of time, period)
<i>het stuk</i> (piece)	<i>de biefstuk</i> ¹ (steak)
<i>het weer</i> (weather)	<i>de brandweer</i> ² (fire-brigade)
<i>het zegel</i> (seal)	<i>de postzegel</i> (stamp)

7.1.4 NOUNS WITH TWO GENDERS

There are many nouns that can have two genders: there are those that have two genders with no difference in meaning and those that do have a difference in meaning.

Nouns with two genders with no difference in meaning, the more common gender is given first (there are more nouns in this category):

het/de affiche (poster)
het/de deksel (lid)
de/het matras (mattress)
de/het omslag (envelope)

Note: *de keer* (time) but *deze/dit keer*

Note the peculiarities of gender in the following expressions:

het been but *hij is weer op de been*
he is on his legs again (actually an old plural form)
het weer but *hij is in de weer*
he is up and about, busy
het meer but *de Bijlmermeer, de Haarlemmermeer*
het hout but *de Haarlemmerhout*

Nouns with two genders with a difference in meaning :

<i>de bal</i> (ball)	<i>het bal</i> (ball, dance)
pl. <i>ballen</i>	pl. <i>bals</i>
<i>de blik</i> (glance)	<i>het blik</i> (tin, i.e. metal and tin can)
<i>de bos</i> (bouquet)	<i>het bos</i> (forest)
<i>de doek</i> (cloth, i.e. object)	<i>het doek</i> (canvas, curtain, film screen)
<i>de hof</i> (court yard)	<i>het hof</i> (court of a king)
<i>de idee</i> (philosophical idea)	<i>het idee</i> (plan, thought)
<i>de jacht</i> (hunting)	<i>het jacht</i> (yacht)
<i>de eerste maal</i> (first time, occasion)	<i>het maal</i> (meal)
<i>de mens</i> – man (kind)	<i>het mens</i> (woman, pej.)
<i>de pad</i> (toad)	<i>het pad</i> (path)
pl. <i>padden</i>	pl. <i>paden</i>
<i>de patroon</i> (patron, sponsor)	<i>het patroon</i> (pattern)
<i>de portier</i> (porter)	<i>het portier</i> (door of a vehicle)
<i>de punt</i> (point, i.e. of a needle)	<i>het punt</i> (point, mark, place)
<i>de Heilige Schrift</i> (Bible)	<i>het schrift</i> (exercise book)
<i>de soort</i> (species)	<i>het soort</i> (kind, sort)
<i>de stof</i> (material)	<i>het stof</i> (dust)
<i>de veer</i> (feather, spring)	<i>het veer</i> (ferry)

Note that the names of all precious stones have two genders: they are common gender when the noun refers to the individual stones and neuter when it refers to the stone as a material:

de smaragd – the emerald (jewel)
het smaragd – emerald (material)

7.2 Plural of Nouns (*meervoudsvorming*)

Dutch nouns form their plural by the addition of either *-s* or *-en* to the singular, the latter ending being more common. The basic rule for plural formation is always to add *-en* unless the word belongs to one of the following *-s* plural categories.

¹ In fact this is a corruption of the English word 'steak'

² Actually of different origin; derived from the verb *weren* = to avert

7.2.1 -S PLURALS (i.e.: -s or -'s)

1 All nouns ending in unstressed *-el*, *-en* and *-er*. This is a very large group, eg. *tafels*, *jongens*, *spijkers* – also *bezems*.

Exceptions: *aderen* (veins), *artikelen* (articles), *christenen* (Christians), *engelen* (angels), *maatregelen* (measures), *middelen* (means), *mosselen* (mussels), *redenen* (reasons), *wonderen* (wonders).

Also nouns with the suffix *-sel* and compounds with *-stel*, eg. *verschijnselen* (phenomena), *beginselen* (principles); *opstellen* (essays), *toestellen* (appliances).

In older writings and more formal style nouns in this group are often found with an *-en* ending, eg. *appelen*, *wapenen*.

The following nouns take on a new meaning when given an *-en* plural:

hemelen – heavens

hemels – canopies

hersenen – brains (organ, food)

hersens – brains (food)

letteren – literature³

letters – letters (of the alphabet)

middelen – means

middels – waists

tafelen – tables (lists)

tafels – tables (for food)

vaderen – fore-fathers⁴

vaders – fathers

wateren – water ways

waters – waters

wortelen – carrots

wortels – roots, carrots

Note: Words like *wiel* (wheel), *schoen* (shoe) and *mier* (ant) do not contain *-el*, *-en* and *-er* as endings and thus add *-en*; similarly *modèl* has a stressed *-el* ending and goes *modellen*.

2 Nouns ending in *-erd* and *-aard* and designating masculine beings, eg. *sufferds* (idiots), *grijsaards* (old men).
Exceptions: *Spanjaarden* (Spaniards).

3 All diminutives ending in *-je*, eg. *koekjes* (biscuits), *huisjes* (houses).

Note: *kindertjes* (kiddies), *hoendertjes* (fowls), *kleertjes* (clothes) (derived from the plural of the non-diminutive form).

4 Nouns ending in *-a*, *-o* and *-u* (all are of foreign origin), eg. *firma's* (firms), *auto's* (cars), *paraplu's* (umbrellas).

The apostrophe is inserted because *autos*, for example, would be pronounced with a short *o*; a long *o* sound can be preserved in a closed syllable only by doubling the letter. The Dutchman finds the spelling *autoos* strange and thus replaces the second *o* with an apostrophe. Thus it is not necessary in *cadeaus*, *cafés* and *Hindoes*, for example, but it is used in *baby's* and *ski's*.

5 Many foreign words ending in *-e*, eg. *actrices* (actresses), *dames* (ladies), *garages*, *secretaresses* (secretaries), *studentes* (female students).

For Dutch words ending in *-e* see p. 39.

6 Foreign words ending in unstressed *-ie*, eg. *families*, *petities*, *provincies*, *studies*.

In higher style the words in this group are found with *-ën*, eg. *de elf provinciën van Nederland*.

7 Many loan words (mostly of English and French origin) that are still regarded as foreign words,

eg. *clubs*, *films*, *perrons* (platforms), *restaurants*, *tanks*, *telefoons*, *trottoirs* (foot-paths).

Nouns of French origin ending in *-eur* and *-trice* belong here too,

eg. *auteurs* (authors), *automonteurs* (mechanics), *ingenieurs* (engineers), *kapiteins* (captains); *actrices*, *directrices*

Exception: *directeuren* (also with *-s*).

8 Foreign words ending in *-ier* and *-oor* take *-s* when referring to people and *-en* when referring to things,

eg. *kruideniers* (grocers), *winkeliers* (shop-keepers), *portiers* (doormen), *pastoors* (R.C. priests); *formulieren* (forms), *scharnieren* (hinges), *portieren* (doors), *kantoren* (offices).

Exceptions: *officieren* (officers), *scholieren* (school-children).

³ *Faculteit der Letteren* – Arts Faculty

⁴ *de vroede vaderen* – the City Fathers

9 A few native Dutch words denoting male beings,

eg. *broers* (brothers), *bruidgom*s (bridegrooms), *koks* (cooks), *maats* (mates), *ooms* (uncles), *zoons* (sons).

Note: *zoons* also has a plural *zonen* which is found in names of firms, eg. *van Goor en Zonen*.

The military ranks *kolonel*, *korporaal* and *luitenant* also take *-s*. (All take the stress on the final syllable).

7.2.2 -EN PLURALS (i.e.: *-n* and *-en*)

1 When the *-en* suffix is added to nouns to form the plural the following spelling changes apply:

a Nouns with *aa*, *ee*, *oo* or *uu* drop one vowel in the open syllable produced by the suffixing of *-en*,

maan (moon) – *manen*, *peer* (pear) – *peren*, *brood* (bread) – *broden*, *muur* (wall) – *muren*.

b Nouns with long vowels or diphthongs ending in *-s* change to *z* (i.e. voicing of *s* in intervocalic position),

Chinees (Chinese) – *Chinezen*, *huis* (house) – *huizen*, *kies* (molar) – *kiezen*, *prijs* (price, prize) – *prijzen*, *reis* (journey) – *reizen*, *roos* (rose) – *rozen*.

Exceptions: *eis* (demand) – *eisen*, *kous* (stocking) – *kousen*, *kruis* (cross) – *kruisen* or *kruizen*, *paus* (Pope) – *pausen*, *Pruis* (Prussian) – *Pruisen*, *saus* (sauce) – *sausen*, *zeis* (scythe) – *zeisen*.

c Nouns ending in *-ms*, *-ns* and *-rs* change to *z*,

gems (chamois) – *gemzen*, *gans* (goose) – *ganzen*, *grens* (border) – *grenzen*, *vers* (poem, stanza) – *verzen*.

Exceptions: *dans* (dance) – *dansen*, *kikvors* (frog) – *kikvorsen*, *koers* (rate, course) – *koersen*, *krans* (wreath) – *kransen*, *lans* (lance) – *lansen*, *mars* (march) – *marsen*, *mens* (person) – *mensen*, *pers* (press) – *persen*, but *Pers* (Persian) – *Perzen*, *prins* (prince) – *prinsen*, *tendens* (tendency) – *tendensen*, *wals* (waltz) – *walsen*, *wens* (wish) – *wensen*.

d Nouns with long vowels or diphthongs ending in *-f* change to *v* (i.e. voicing of *f* in intervocalic position),

brief (letter) – *brieven*, *graaf* (count) – *graven*, *kloof* (gap) – *kloven*, *neef* (nephew, male cousin) – *neven*.

Exceptions: nouns of Greek origin ending in *-graaf*, eg. *fotograaf* (photographer) – *fotografen*, *paragraaf* – *paragrafen*.

Also *filosoof* (philosopher) – *filosofen*.

e Nouns ending in *-lf* and *-rf* change to *v*,

golf (wave) – *golven*, *wolf* – *wolven*, *werf* (wharf) – *werven*.

Exception: *elf* – *elfen*.

f Nouns containing a short vowel and ending in a consonant double the consonant to preserve the short vowel,

bok (billy-goat) – *bokken*, *fles* (bottle) – *flessen*, *hor* (wire-screen) – *horren*, *mus* (sparrow) – *mussen*, *pot* – *potten*, *straf* (punishment) – *straffen*.

Note: The two stressed feminine endings *-es* and *-in* belong here, eg. *boerin* (farmer's wife) – *boerinnen*, *lerares* (female teacher) – *leraressen*.

g Nouns ending in *-ee* add *-ën*,

orchidee (orchid) – *orchideeën*, *zee* (sea) – *zeeën*.

Exceptions: words still regarded as French: eg. *logée* (visitor) – *logées*, *soiree* (party) – *soirees*.

Also the Latin word *dominee* (reverend) – *dominees*.

2 There is a group of very common nouns that have a short vowel in the singular but a long vowel in the plural, i.e. nouns which one would expect to find under *f*. above which do not double the consonant and thus cause the vowel to be pronounced long.

Common gender:

<i>dag</i>	day	<i>dagen</i>
<i>god</i>	God	<i>goden</i>
<i>hertog</i>	duke	<i>hertogen</i>
<i>hof</i>	court yard	<i>hoven</i>
<i>oorlog</i>	war	<i>oorlogen</i>
<i>slag</i>	blow, battle	<i>slagen</i>
<i>staf</i>	staff	<i>staven</i> ¹
<i>weg</i>	road	<i>wegen</i>

Neuter:

<i>bad</i>	bath	<i>baden</i>
<i>bedrag</i>	amount	<i>bedragen</i>
<i>bevel</i>	order	<i>bevelen</i>
<i>blad</i>	leaf of a book, magazine	<i>bladen</i> ²

Note: 1 *staven* is also the plural of *staaf* (stick)

2 *blad* (leaf of a tree) becomes *bladeren*

<i>dak</i>	roof	<i>daken</i>
<i>dal</i>	valley	<i>dalen</i>
<i>gat</i>	hole	<i>gaten</i>
<i>gebed</i>	prayer	<i>gebeden</i>
<i>gebod</i>	commandment	<i>geboden</i>
<i>gebrek</i>	failing	<i>gebreken</i>
<i>glas</i>	glass	<i>glazen</i>
<i>graf</i>	grave	<i>graven</i> ³
<i>hol</i>	cave	<i>holen</i>
<i>lot</i>	lottery ticket	<i>loten</i>
<i>pad</i>	path	<i>paden</i> ⁴
<i>schot</i>	shot	<i>schoten</i> ⁴
<i>slot</i>	lock, castle	<i>sloten</i>
<i>spel</i>	game	<i>spelen</i>
<i>vat</i>	barrel	<i>vaten</i> ⁴
<i>verdrag</i>	treaty	<i>verdragen</i>

3 There is a small group of nouns with a short vowel in the singular that both lengthen and change their vowel in the plural,

gelid (joint) – *gelederen*, *lid* (member, limb) – *leden* (members), but *ledematen* (limbs), *schip* (ship) – *schepen*, *smid* (smith) – *smeden*, *stad* (city) – *steden*.

4 Nouns ending in *-aar* usually take *-en* but are found with *-s*,

adelaar (eagle) – *adelaren*, *ambtenaar* (official) – *ambtenaren*, *leraar* (teacher) – *leraren*.

5 Nouns ending in stressed *-ie* add *-ën*,

melodie (tune) – *melodieën*, *symfonie* (symphony) – *symfonieën*.

Exception: *bougie* (spark-plug) – *bougies*.

Those ending in unstressed *-ie* usually take *-s* (see *-s* plurals, point 7.2.1.6) but some are found with *-n* in higher style,

provinciën, *koloniën*, *studiën* (compare *melodieën* etc.).

financiën (finances) always takes *-n*.

3 *graven* is also the plural of *graaf* (count)

4 *pad* (toad) becomes *padden*

Schot (Scot) becomes *Schotten*

spel (game of cards) becomes *spellen*

handvat (handle) becomes *handvatten*

6 Foreign nouns ending in *-or* usually take *-en* with a change in stress to the penultimate syllable,

professor – *professoren*, *lector* (lecturer, reader) – *lectoren*, *motor* – *motoren* (motors, engines, but *motors* means motorcycles), *organisator* – *organisatoren*.

The spelling *doctor* is used for the academic title and has a plural *doctoren* or *doctores*; the physician is usually spelt *dokter* and has a plural in *-s*.

7 Nouns ending in *-e* cause difficulty: there are those that always take *-s* (see *-s* plurals, point 7.2.1.5); there are a few that always take *-n*,

seconde (second), *echtgenote* (female spouse);

there are also those that take either, both endings being very common – this is particularly the case for nouns formed from adjectives by the addition of *-te*,

ziekte (sickness, disease), *hoogte* (height), *vlake* (plain); *type* (type).

8 Many Dutch nouns that originally ended in *-de* in the singular (and still do in formal style) add *-n* to the *-de* in the plural,

bladzij(de) (page) – *bladzijden*, *la(de)* (drawer) – *laden*, *tree* (step) – *treden*.

9 The nouns *koe* (cow) and *vlo* (flea) insert an *-i-* before *-en*,

koeien, *vlooien* (colloquially one also hears *vlooi* in the singular).

10 Nouns (usually abstracts) ending in *-heid* (i.e. *-ness*) form their plural in *-heden*,

moeilijkheid (difficulty) – *moeilijkheden*, *schoonheid* (beauty) – *schoonheden*.

7.2.3 -EREN PLURALS

There is a small group of neuter nouns that preserve an old plural ending in *-eren* (compare Eng. children):

<i>been</i>	(bone)	<i>beenderen</i> ⁵
<i>blad</i>	(leaf)	<i>bladeren</i> ⁶
<i>ei</i>	(egg)	<i>eieren</i>
<i>gelid</i>	(joint)	<i>gelederen</i> ⁷

5 *been* (leg) becomes *benen*.

6 *blad* (leaf of a book, magazine) becomes *bladen*.

eg. *dagbladen* – daily newspapers

7 See *-en* plurals, point 7.2.2.3.

<i>gemoed</i>	(mind)	<i>gemoederen</i>
<i>goed</i>	(goods, wares)	<i>goederen</i>
<i>hoen</i>	(fowl)	<i>hoenderen</i> ⁸
<i>kalf</i>	(calf)	<i>kalveren</i>
<i>kind</i>	(child)	<i>kinderen</i>
<i>lam</i>	(lamb)	<i>lammeren</i>
<i>lied</i>	(song)	<i>liederen</i>
<i>rad</i>	(wheel)	<i>raderen</i>
<i>rund</i>	(cow, ox)	<i>runderen</i>
<i>volk</i>	(nation, people)	<i>volkeren</i> ⁹

Kleren (clothes) is a contracted form of *klederen* (from *kleed*, an archaic form).

7.2.4 IRREGULAR PLURAL FORMATIONS

7.2.4.1 Words ending in *-man* have a plural in *-lieden* or *-lui*, the former being more formal,

zeeman (sailor) – *zeelieden*, *zeelui*; *koopman* (merchant) – *kooplieden*, *kooplui*.

Some words which are only used in formal contexts never employ *-lui*,
edelman (nobleman), *raadsman* (councillor).

Exceptions: *muzelmannen* (Muslims), *Noormannen* (Normans), *vulnismannen* (rubbish-men); *Engelsman* (Englishman) – *Engelsen*, *Fransman* (Frenchman) – *Fransen*; *buurman*, *-vrouw* (neighbour) – *buren*.

7.2.4.2 Words of Greek and Latin origin:

a Nouns ending in *-um* can take *-s* or *-a*, the former being more common,

albums (never *alba*), *atheneums* (high schools), *datums* (dates), *decennium* (decade) – *decennia* (never *decenniums*), *museums* or *musea*.

b Nouns ending in *-us* referring to people take *-i*,

doctorandus (Dutch academic title) – *doctorandi*, *historicus** (historian) – *historici*, *musicus** (musician) – *musici*, *neerlandicus** (student of Dutch) – *neerlandici*; also *catálogus* – *catalogi* (the accent is only to show stress).

Note: The letter *c* of the singular is pronounced *k* and that of the plural is pronounced *s*.
The words *cactus* and *circus* add *-sen*.

⁸ also *hoenders*.

⁹ also *volken*.

c The nouns *examen* (examination) and *tentàmen* (preliminary exam) can take *-s* or *-ina*, i.e. *tentàmens* or *tentàmina*.

7.2.5 ENGLISH PLURALS WHICH ARE SINGULAR IN DUTCH

The following nouns are singular in Dutch and are followed by a verb in the singular when one item is referred to; those with an asterisk can of course be used in the plural when more than one item is referred to.

ashes – <i>de as</i>	politics – <i>de politiek</i>
binoculars – <i>de verrekijker*</i>	pyjamas – <i>de pyjama*</i>
economics – <i>de economie</i>	scissors – <i>de schaar*</i>
holidays – <i>de vakantie*</i>	spectacles – <i>de bril*</i>
the Netherlands – <i>Nederland</i>	tongs – <i>de tang*</i>
pants – <i>de broek*</i>	vegetables – <i>de groente*</i> ¹⁰

7.3 Feminising masculine agents

Dutch has a variety of endings used to denote the female of certain professions, nationalities and animals. There are actually very few rules for their use and on the whole one can best simply learn the feminine equivalents by heart. The following will, however, serve to illustrate the endings in question.

7.3.1 *-e*:

a This ending is commonly used with foreign words with a stressed ending.

studente, *docente*, *sociologe* (plural in *-n* or *-s*)
telefoniste (plural in *-n* or *-s*), *typiste* (plural in *-s* or *-n*)

b Also indigenous words ending in *-genoot* (plural in *-n* or *-s*)

echtgenote, *tijdgenote*

c The female inhabitant of most countries is designated by the adjective of nationality plus *-e* (see p. 254).

Australische, *Engelse*, *Nederlandse*

7.3.2 *-es* (stressed):
(plural in *-sen*)

lerares, *onderwijzeres*, *zangeres*, *barones*, *prinses*

¹⁰ *groente*: also pl. *groentes* or *groenten*.

7.3.3 *-esse* (stressed):

This ending is used to feminise masculine professions ending in *-aris* (plural in *-s*)

secretaresse, bibliothekaresse

7.3.4 *-euse* (stressed):

This ending is only found in words of French origin of which the masculine ends in *-eur* (plural in *-s*).

ouvreuse, masseuse

7.3.5 *-in* (stressed):

a Just a few nationalities take this ending (plural in *-nen*).

Friezin, Jodin, Russin

b A few animals take this ending (plural in *-nen*).

berin, leeuwin, wolvin

c Several other nouns (plural in *-nen*).

gravin, keizerin, koningin, vorstin; boerin, kokkin, godin, vriendin, negerin

7.3.6 *-ster*:

a Nouns derived from verb stems take this ending (plural in *-s*).

kapster, schrijfster, toneelspeelster, verkoopster, verpleegster, werkster

b Nouns ending in *-stander* and *-ganger* take this ending (plural in *-s*).

voorstandster, voorgangster

7.3.7 *-trice*:

Nouns of French origin ending in *-teur* take this ending (plural in *-s*).

actrice, directrice

Note: Some nouns of Latin origin ending in *-us* formerly took an *-a* ending to denote the female; nowadays, however, the masculine form is usually used (plural in *-i*, former plural of feminine forms in *-a* was *-ae* or *'s*).

musicus (formerly *musica*), *neerlandicus* (formerly *neerlandica*)

The *-a* ending is still used occasionally.

7.4 Possession

The English possessive 's' is known to Dutch also but is not used as extensively in Dutch. Generally speaking it is only commonly used after proper nouns:

Annekes boek, Vaders auto.

Close relatives preceded by a possessive can employ this *s* too:

mijn moeders keuken, zijn broers brommer

All other nouns can better employ a *van* construction, however:

de auto van mijn oom, de hoofdstad van Frankrijk

Note: a friend of my brother's – *een vriend van mijn broer*

The above is a safe guide to correct spoken and written forms; in practice, however, the *s* forms are commonly heard in instances not recommended here.

The apostrophe is only used to denote possession when the proper noun ends in a vowel, *s* or *z*:

Otto's boek, Rubens' schilderijen, Liz' fiets.

Colloquially one will often hear *Hans z'n vriend, mijn oom z'n auto, Anneke d'r vriend* (see p. 59).

7.5 Diminutives (verkleinwoorden)

The diminutive is used extensively in Dutch with many connotations of meaning. The mechanics of diminutising a noun are dealt with here first and then the semantic implications of the diminutive. The various forms of the diminutive are a question of phonetics.

7.5.1 FORMATION

je

The basic form is the addition of *-je* to the end of the noun:

<i>aap</i>	–	<i>aapje</i>	<i>huis</i>	–	<i>huisje</i> ¹¹
<i>boek</i>	–	<i>boekje</i>	<i>oog</i>	–	<i>oogje</i>
<i>fornuis</i>	–	<i>fornuisje</i> ¹¹	<i>pet</i>	–	<i>petje</i>
<i>hand</i>	–	<i>handje</i>	<i>zak</i>	–	<i>zakje</i>

-tje

a Words containing a long vowel or diphthong, either final or followed by *l*, *n* or *r* add *-tje* to the noun:

<i>ei</i>	–	<i>eitje</i>	<i>stoel</i>	–	<i>stoeltje</i>
<i>ui</i>	–	<i>uitje</i>	<i>schoen</i>	–	<i>schoentje</i>
<i>vrouw</i>	–	<i>vrouwtje</i>	<i>deur</i>	–	<i>deurtje</i>

b Words ending in *-el*, *-en* and *-er* also take *-tje*:

<i>tafel</i>	–	<i>tafeltje</i>	<i>kamer</i>	–	<i>kamertje</i>
<i>deken</i>	–	<i>dekentje</i>	<i>jongen</i>	–	<i>jongetje</i>

¹¹ *sj* is pronounced (ʃ)

-etje

a Words containing a short vowel and ending in *l*, *r*, *m*, *n* and *ng* (but not *-ing*, see below) add *-etje*:

<i>bel</i>	– <i>belletje</i>	<i>pan</i>	– <i>pannetje</i>
<i>ster</i>	– <i>sterretje</i>	<i>ding</i>	– <i>dingetje</i>
<i>kam</i>	– <i>kammetje</i>		

b A few nouns containing a short vowel ending in *b*, *g* and *p* add *-etje* (but most will be found in the first group):

<i>krab</i>	– <i>krabbetje</i>	<i>big</i>	– <i>biggetje</i>
<i>rib</i>	– <i>ribbetje</i>	<i>vlag</i>	– <i>vlaggetje</i>
<i>slab</i>	– <i>slabbetje</i>	<i>kip</i>	– <i>kippetje</i>

Some nouns with these characteristics have two diminutive forms (one as described in the first group and one as described here):

<i>brug</i>	– <i>brugje</i> , <i>bruggetje</i>
<i>rug</i>	– <i>rugje</i> , <i>ruggetje</i>
<i>weg</i>	– <i>wegje</i> , <i>weggetje</i>
<i>pop</i>	– <i>popje</i> , <i>poppetje</i>

-pje

Words ending in *m* add *-pje*:

<i>boom</i>	– <i>boompje</i>	<i>arm</i>	– <i>armpje</i>
<i>duim</i>	– <i>duimpje</i>	<i>bezem</i>	– <i>bezempje</i>

Note: *bloem* has two forms: *bloempje* – little flower; *bloemetje* – a bunch of flowers

Many of those monosyllabic neuter nouns which have a short vowel in the singular but a long vowel in the plural also have a long vowel in the diminutive form:

<i>blad</i> (pl. <i>bladeren</i>)	– <i>blaadje</i>	<i>pad</i> (pl. <i>paden</i>)	– <i>paadje</i> ¹³
<i>gat</i> (pl. <i>gaten</i>)	– <i>gaatje</i> ¹²	<i>schip</i> (pl. <i>schepen</i>)	– <i>scheepje</i>
<i>glas</i> (pl. <i>glazen</i>)	– <i>glaasje</i>	<i>vat</i> (pl. <i>vaten</i>)	– <i>vaatje</i>

but

<i>dak</i> (pl. <i>daken</i>)	– <i>dakje</i>	<i>spel</i> (pl. <i>spelen</i>)	– <i>spelletje</i> etc.
--------------------------------	----------------	----------------------------------	-------------------------

¹² *gatje* = backside

¹³ *padje* = little toad

Three nouns in this category have two forms:

<i>dag</i> (pl. <i>dagen</i>)	– <i>dagje</i> , <i>daagjes</i>
<i>lot</i> (pl. <i>loten</i>)	– <i>lotje</i> , <i>lootje</i>
<i>rad</i> (pl. <i>raderen</i>)	– <i>radje</i> , <i>raadje</i> (also: <i>radertje</i>)

The nouns *kind* and *kleren* (a plural) have a special form:

<i>kindje</i>	– little child (can also take a plural <i>-s</i>)
<i>kindertjes</i>	– little children (always plural)
<i>kleertjes</i>	– little clothes (always plural)

-kje

Nouns ending in *-ing* change the *g* to *k* before adding *-je*; nouns ending in *-ling*, however, take *-etje*:

<i>koning</i>	– <i>koninkje</i>
<i>regering</i>	– <i>regerinkje</i>

but

<i>wandeling</i>	– <i>wandelingetje</i>
<i>leerling</i>	– <i>leerlingetje</i>

also

<i>tekening</i>	– <i>tekeningetje</i>
-----------------	-----------------------

Spelling peculiarities

Nouns ending in long vowels (i.e. an open syllable) need to double the vowel when the diminutive ending is added (i.e. making a closed syllable) to preserve the long sound:

<i>oma</i>	– <i>omaatje</i>
<i>auto</i>	– <i>autootje</i>
<i>paraplu</i>	– <i>parapluitje</i>
<i>café</i>	– <i>cafeetje</i>
<i>Margot</i> ¹⁴	– <i>Margootje</i>

Variant forms of the diminutive

In the west of the Netherlands a colloquial variant of the diminutive exists which is sometimes also used in cultured speech for humorous effect; the ending is *-ie*, eg. *huisie*, *jochie*, *koekie*, *lichie* (from *licht*), *meisie*.

¹⁴ 't' not pronounced

In the south of the Netherlands and in Belgium the *-je* form is often colloquially replaced by *-ke*, with phonetic variants *-ske* and *-pke*:

huiske, meiske, slakske, boompke

This ending is common in female christian names, even in the north:

Anneke, Aafke

An archaic variant often found in names and titles is *-ken*:

Manneken Pis, Duyfken

7.5.2 SEMANTIC IMPLICATIONS OF THE DIMINUTIVE

It is particularly the nuances of meaning expressed by the diminutive which make it so peculiarly unique in Dutch but also so difficult for non-native speakers to master. The following can only serve as a guide to its main uses; its potential is infinite as it is very much a productive ending and is not restricted to nouns (see p. 48). On the whole the connotation of a diminutive form is a positive one, but sometimes it fulfils a derogatory function (see point 6).

1 The diminutive's basic function is to make things small.

huis – house; *huisje* – little house, cottage
Roodkapje – Little Red Riding Hood

Even with this meaning, however, the diminutive is commonly preceded by the adjective *klein*.

De kat zit onder een klein struikje.
The cat is sitting under a little shrub.
Hij woont op een heel klein kamertje.
He's living in a teeny weeny room.

2 The diminutive is also used as a form of endearment; christian names (and not just of children but particularly women's names) are often diminutised, eg. *Jantje, Frankje, Marietje, Annetje*.

3 Often the diminutive form of a noun renders a completely separate lexical item in English:

<i>brood</i>	– loaf of bread	<i>broodje</i>	– bread roll
<i>kaart</i>	– map	<i>kaartje</i>	– ticket
<i>koek</i>	– cake	<i>koekje</i>	– biscuit
<i>koop</i>	– buy	<i>koopje</i>	– good buy/purchase
<i>lepel</i>	– spoon	<i>lepeltje</i>	– tea spoon

Mongool – Mongol
scheermes – razor
schotel – dish
viool – violin

Mongooltje – Mongol child
scheermesje – razor blade
schotelkje – saucer
viooltje – violet, pansy

The diminutives of *broer* and *zuster* are *broertje* and *zusje* (not *zustertje*) respectively; these forms render automatically younger brother or sister.

Mijn broertje heeft er een.

My younger brother has one.

The diminutive forms of *man* and *wijf* are used for male and female with reference to animals.

Is het een mannetje of wijfje?

Is it a male or female?

Het is een wijfjesaap, geen mannetjesaap

It is a female monkey, not a male monkey

The latter forms are used chiefly for animals for which there is no separate word for male and female.

4 The diminutive is used to itemise some quantitative nouns, i.e. nouns that stand for a collective quantity (particularly varieties of food and drink) take on the meaning of one item of that quantity when they bear the diminutive ending:

<i>advokaat</i>	– advokaat	<i>een advokaatje</i>	– a glass of advokaat
<i>bier</i>	– beer	<i>een biertje</i>	– a glass of beer
<i>chocola</i>	– chocolate	<i>een chocolaatje</i>	– a chocolate
<i>gebak</i>	– pastry	<i>een gebakje</i>	– a pastry, little cake
<i>hout</i>	– wood	<i>een houtje</i>	– a bit of wood
<i>ijs</i>	– icecream	<i>een ijsje</i>	– an icecream
<i>koek</i>	– cake	<i>een koekje</i>	– a biscuit
<i>krijt</i>	– chalk	<i>een krijtje</i>	– a piece of chalk
<i>likeur</i>	– liqueur	<i>een likeurtje</i>	– a glass of liqueur
<i>muziek</i>	– music	<i>een muziekje</i>	– a piece of music (coll.)
<i>snoep</i>	– confectionery	<i>een snoepje</i>	– a sweet
<i>worst</i>	– sausage	<i>een worstje</i>	– a sausage

These endings can have other connotations, however:

een lekker wijntje – a very nice wine (not a glass of wine)

5 A few nouns only exist as diminutives:

meisje – girl (formerly from *meid*)
lachertje – ridiculous suggestion, situation etc.
dubbeltje – 10 cents
kwartje – 25 cents
op het nippertje – in the nick of time

The following children's games always contain the diminutive:

- krijgertje spelen* – to play tag
verstoppertje spelen – to play hide and seek
touwtje springen – to skip

6 Occasionally the diminutive can give a derogatory connotation to a noun:

- burgermannetje* – petit bourgeois
een raar taaltje – a strange lingo
*boertje van buten*¹⁵ – yokel

7.5.3 DIMINUTIVES OF OTHER PARTS OF SPEECH

It is possible for words other than nouns to take a diminutive ending, thus giving a new connotation to the word concerned or even a completely new meaning.

1 **Adverbs** are the most notable example of words other than nouns that have this potential; the ending used is *-jes* (with phonetic variants *-tjes* and *-pjes*). Its function is one of toning down the intensity of meaning. In the spoken language it is still productive (see p. 110).

- | | |
|---------------------------------|--|
| <i>eventjes</i> – just a minute | <i>stilletjes</i> – quietly, secretively |
| <i>gezelligjes</i> – cosily | <i>stiekempjes</i> – secretively |
| <i>knusjes</i> – cosily | <i>strakjes</i> – in a moment |
| <i>losjes</i> – loosely | <i>warmpjes</i> – warmly |
| <i>netjes</i> – neatly | <i>zachtjes</i> – quietly, softly |

Wij zaten lekker warmpjes binnen
 We were sitting inside nice and warm
Het is hier erg knusjes, hè?
 It is very cosy here, isn't it?

2 **Adjectives** used as nouns can have a diminutive ending; this form of the adjective is particularly commonly used where we say in English 'a white one', 'a little one' where the 'one' cannot be translated literally:

een witje, een kleintje

also

de kleintjes – the little ones (children or things)
een nieuwtje – a piece of news

15 A colloquial form of *buiten*.

3 **Numerals** can also take the ending in certain expressions. 'On my/your/his own etc.' is always in *mijn/je/zijn eentje*. A more familiar form of *met z'n tweeën/drieën* etc. is *met z'n tweetjes/drietjes* etc.

4 The expressions *een onderonsje* – 'a tête-à-tête' and *ietsje* – 'a little' show the diminutive being suffixed to **pronouns**,

ik zal je er ietsje van vertellen
 I'll tell you a little about it.

The adverb *iets* (somewhat) can also take it,

ik ben ietsje moe
 I am somewhat tired.

5 *Een moetje* – 'a shotgun marriage' is a quaint example of a noun formed from a **verbal particle** by addition of the diminutive.

6 There are a few expressions derived from **prepositions** incorporating the diminutive:

- | | |
|---------------------------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>toetje</i> | – dessert |
| <i>uitje</i> (from <i>uitstapje</i>) | – excursion |
| <i>een ommetje maken</i> | – to go for a short walk |
| <i>rondje</i> | – round (of drinks) |

8 Pronouns (*voornaamwoorden*)

8.1 Personal pronouns (*persoonlijke voornaamwoorden*)

There are two series of personal pronouns: subject and object pronouns. The forms in the right-hand columns are the unemphatic forms; those that are not normally written are given in brackets. Some pronouns do not have unemphatic forms.

	Subject		Object	
Sing.	1.	<i>ik</i> ¹ ('k)	<i>mij</i>	<i>me</i>
	2.	<i>jij</i> <i>je</i>	<i>jou</i>	<i>je</i>
		<i>u</i>	<i>u</i>	
	3.	<i>hij</i> ² (ie)	<i>hem</i> ² ('m)	
		<i>zij</i> ² <i>ze</i>	<i>haar</i> ^{2,5} (d'r)	
		<i>het</i> ^{2,3} ('t)	<i>het</i> ² ('t)	
Pl.	1.	<i>wij</i> <i>we</i>	<i>ons</i>	
	2.	<i>jullie</i> <i>je</i>	<i>jullie</i>	<i>je</i>
		<i>u</i>	<i>u</i>	
	3.	<i>zij</i> ^{3,4} <i>ze</i>	<i>hen/hun</i> ⁴	<i>ze</i> (people)
			<i>die</i>	<i>ze</i> (things and people)

8.1.1 UNEMPHATIC PRONOUNS

The distinction between emphatic and unemphatic pronouns, which also exists in English in the spoken language (but not in the written), is very important in Dutch.

- 1 An extra emphatic form *ikke* also exists in the spoken language only, eg. *Jij hebt mijn boek gestolen, niet waar? Wat, ikke?*
- 2 Neuter words referring to male or female beings (eg. *het jongetje*, *het meisje*, *het wijf*) are usually replaced by masculine or feminine pronouns (see also footnote 8 on p. 58) but can be replaced by neuter pronouns in formal style.
eg. *Het jongetje is ziek geworden maar hij wordt zeker wel beter.*
- 3 *Het* can also be used to translate English 'they'. (see p. 55)
- 4 In colloquial Dutch *hun* also occurs as a subject pronoun meaning 'they' but it can only refer to people. This practice, which is becoming very common these days, is better avoided.
eg. *Hun liggen op het bed.*
- 5 Colloquially one will often hear *ze* as the unemphatic object form of *haar*. It may also be written.

One important difference from English is that many, but not all the unemphatic forms, are written. If no particular stress is required, it is of no consequence whether one writes the emphatic or unemphatic form of the subject pronoun.

Heb je je vrouw gesproken?

or

Heb jij je vrouw gesproken?

Even the latter example can be read aloud substituting orally *je* for *jij*.

a The unemphatic form of the possessive *zijn* is written only in such expressions as *met z'n tweeën*, *op z'n best* where it must be used. Also the colloquial forms *mijn broer z'n auto* and *mijn zuster d'r man*, if ever written, require the unemphatic form (see p. 59).

b The unemphatic form of *jullie* can only be used when *jullie* has already been used as the subject of the sentence; *jullie* can then be followed by an unemphatic possessive or reflexive form.

Jullie kunnen je onmogelijk vergissen.

Jullie moeten je snoepjes in je zak stoppen.

The unemphatic subject form *je* can only be used when a previous sentence has indicated that this *je* stands for *jullie* and not for *jij*. In this case a singular verb is used even though *je* is standing for *jullie*.

Jullie mogen morgen komen en als je gegeten hebt, kunnen we naar de bioscoop gaan.

It is very common in spoken Dutch to begin a sentence with *jullie* to indicate that one means you plural and then to continue the conversation with *je* + singular verb; more than one *jullie* in a sentence sounds clumsy.

c *U* is officially both a singular and a plural pronoun. However, often *jullie* is used as an unemphatic or rather neutral form of plural *u*. Because *u* demands a singular verb it is felt to refer to one person and for this reason is often replaced by *jullie*, but not in contexts where one must mind one's p's and q's with regard to the form of address.

d Unemphatic *hij* is pronounced *ie*, usually only when it follows the verb and the -t ending can act as a glide, eg. *Heeft-ie dat gedaan?*, *Vandaag gaat-ie naar huis*. The difference between this and the referential *die* (see *die*) is often not heard.

Heeft-ie, heeft die.

ie will also be heard after other words ending in -t, eg. *Weet ie wat ie vandaag moet doen.*

e Just as in English where the somewhat stilted pronoun 'one' is usually substituted with unemphatic 'you', so in Dutch *men* is replaced by *je* (never *jij*) in general speech and can also be said in this meaning to people one otherwise says *u* to. The emphatic form *jij* can only mean 'you', the person one is talking to. Similarly *ze* can replace *men* just as in English 'they' replaces 'one'; the difference between *je* and *ze* in such contexts is the same as between 'you' and 'they', i.e. the person being addressed cannot be included in the action.

Men heeft gisteren de DDR erkend. Ze hebben gisteren de DDR erkend.

The pronoun *we* is often used in an impersonal sense too just as in English.

Hier hebben we het Paleis op de Dam.
(see also p. 165)

f Common in speech but rare in writing is the form *ze* for unemphatic *haar* meaning 'her'. Usually the context will indicate whether 'her' or 'them' is meant.

8.1.2 REMARKS ON SUBJECT AND OBJECT PRONOUNS

1 Second person forms of address: *jij, u, gij, jullie*

Anyone who has attempted to learn another language will be acquainted with the existence of two forms of second person address. In the ABN of the northern Netherlands the two forms are *jij* and *u*. Broadly speaking one can compare the usage of the two with similar couplets in other languages, i.e. French *tu/vous*, German *du/Sie*. In detail, however, usage sometimes differs quite dramatically from those languages.

The verb *tutoyeren*, borrowed from French, means to be on *jij* terms:

Hoe goed ken je de directeur? We tutoyeren elkaar al.

The verb *jijzen* is also used.

a Use of *u*

In addition to the usual usage of the polite form of address for strangers, elders etc., *u* is also employed in the following cases where it would not be used in German, for instance.

- 1 A minority of people, but quite a sizeable one, still say *u* to their parents. This was very common prior to the War and is still quite commonly found.
- 2 It is commonly used for grandparents and aunts and uncles.

U/uw are often still written with capital letters in very formal letters, but this tradition is waning.

b Use of *jij*

Generally speaking *jij* is used for friends, relatives (with the above exceptions), children and animals. Its usage differs from that of *du* in German, for example, in the following ways:

- 1 Teachers use *jij* for schoolchildren of all ages, but the student must say *u* to his teachers.
- 2 Young people of comparable age often call each other *jij* even if they are unacquainted. University students always automatically say *jij* to each other.

c Use of *gij*

In Belgium *gij* (unemphatic *ge*) commonly replaces *jij* but the latter is becoming increasingly popular as the south begins to follow the north more and more in linguistic matters. Dialectally *gij* is also used in the plural. The object and possessive forms of *gij* are *u* and *uw* respectively.

Note: Historically this form is older than *jij* and *u* and for this reason it was the standard written form for centuries, even in the northern Netherlands. It is this form that was used in the seventeenth century state translation of the Bible and thus, if it is used in the North at all nowadays, it usually has a biblical connotation. *Gij* has the same ring about it to the Dutchman as 'thou' to the Englishman. *Gij* often has its own specific form of the verb: *ge zijt, ge waart, ge zoudt*.

d Use of *jullie*

For the use of *jullie* as the plural of *u* see p. 51. The origin of this form is *jelie(den)* (i.e. you people) and is often found as *jelui* in some older literary works.

2 The object pronouns *hen* and *hun* (see 'Woordenlijst', p. XVIII)

Historically there is no distinction between *hen* and *hun*. The two were originally simply phonetic variants of the one word. The distinction is an artificial one imposed upon the language by eighteenth century philologists. The artificiality of the distinction is reflected in Dutch speech today where hardly anybody uses the two according to the rules prescribed. It should be noted, however, that the Dutchman always uses *hun* where grammar strictly speaking demands *hen*, a form which is actually seldom used in the spoken language. In writing, one should attempt to use them correctly.

The rule is:

hen is the direct object and is also used after prepositions.

hun is the indirect object, the only personal pronoun to have a separate dative form.

Ik heb hen gisteren in de stad gezien.

Toen heb ik de informatie aan hen gegeven.

but

Ik heb hun de informatie gegeven.

The distinction is similar to the following in English:

I gave the information to them. (*aan hen*)

I gave them the information. (*hun*)

One is well advised in all the above cases to use *ze* if one is in doubt, but *ze* can of course be used as an unemphatic pronoun only.

Ik heb de informatie aan ze gegeven.

Ik heb ze de informatie gegeven.

It is particularly difficult to distinguish whether *hen* or *hun* is required in cases like the following:

Wij wensten hun geluk.

Het lukte hun de top van de berg te bereiken.

Ik beloofde hun dat ik zou komen.

Ik heb het hun beloofd.

Ik zei hun dat ik morgen zou komen.

In all these cases *hun* is used because the indirect object is required; this is clearly illustrated by the last two examples where the sentence can be rephrased with prepositions:

i.e. *Ik heb het aan hen beloofd.*

Ik zei tegen hen dat ik morgen zou komen.

3 'It' as a subject pronoun (see 'Woordenlijst – geslacht en voornaamwoordelijke aanduiding' p. IX-XXIX)

a It should be noted that singular common gender nouns (whether persons or things) are regarded as being masculine when a pronoun replaces them:

Die stoel heb ik gisteren gekocht. Hij is erg mooi, vind je niet?

b In Belgium the old distinction between masculine and feminine is still very much alive.

Doe de deur dicht. Nee, zij blijft open.

In Holland abstract nouns are replaced in formal style by *zij*, but in colloquial language *hij* is often heard.

Abstract common gender nouns ending in:

-heid	waarheid, eenheid etc.
-ie	commissie, politie etc.
-erij	uitgeverij, bakkerij etc.
-nis	kennis, erfenis etc.
-ing	regering, regeling etc.
-st	kunst, winst etc.
-schap	wetenschap, verwantschap etc. ⁶
-de, -te	begeerte, liefde etc.

De regering heeft vandaag haar besluiten bekendgemaakt.

Female animals, eg. *koe*, *merrie* etc., can be replaced by *zij* but one does commonly hear the Dutch using *hij* with reference to such animals.

Zie je die kat? Hij heeft net gejongd.

c There is an added complication in the translation of an 'it' referring to common gender nouns. There are instances where an 'it' which one would expect to be *hij* is in fact *het*.

The rule is as follows:

As subject of the verb *zijn*, the pronoun *het* is used to refer to all nouns and persons (singular and plural) when

a the predicate is a noun

b the predicate is an adjective used as a noun

but not when the predicate is an adjective; then *het* is used only for singular neuter nouns.

Deze stoel heb ik gisteren gekocht. Het is een heel dure.

but

Deze stoel heb ik gisteren gekocht. Hij was erg duur.

De stem van mijn zuster is erg zacht, maar het is wel een mooie.

but

De stem van mijn zuster is erg zacht, maar hij is wel erg mooi.

Het zijn Duitsers die naast ons wonen.

but

Ze zijn Duits, de mensen die naast ons wonen.

Ik heb twee glazen gebroken. Het waren Italiaanse glazen.

but

Ik heb twee glazen gebroken. Ze waren Italiaans.

⁶ Note that some nouns ending in *-schap* are neuter: *landschap*, *lidmaatschap* (see p. 29 and p. 31).

d In addition to the cases mentioned under c where an 'it' which one would expect to be *hij* is *het*, there are also other instances where *het* is used instead of *hij* but for which no concrete rules can be given (see also 4, c below). It would seem that the pronoun in such cases refers to an action or state rather than to a noun in the first clause.

Je moet de oostkust bezoeken. Het is (er) prachtig.

Hij liet de auto langs de weg staan, want hij wist dat het daar veilig zou zijn.

(but *hij* if *staan* were used instead of *zijn*)

De boerderij van mijn oom is vlakbij Zwolle. Het is ongeveer een kwartier met de auto van Zwolle vandaan.

4 'It' as an object pronoun

a When an object pronoun 'it' refers to a common gender noun, *hem* is used in Dutch, not *het*.

Ik heb een antieke kast gekocht. Wil je hem zien?

Ik kocht een tafel voor mijn moeder maar ze wilde hem niet hebben.

b There are a few instances (see 3, b above) where *haar/ze* are used instead of *hem*.

Wat heb je met de oude tafel gedaan? Ik heb ze verkocht. (Southern Dutch)

c On occasions one will hear *het* as an object pronoun where one would expect *hem* (see 3, d above).

Wat een rare lucht! Nou, ik vind het lekker. (i.e. *Ik vind het lekker ruiken.*)

Er klonk een vlugge stap op de trap, maar zij hoorde het niet. (i.e. *het stappen*)

Ik ga morgen een lezing houden, maar ik weet nog niet of ik het in het Engels of in het Nederlands ga doen.

d 'It' as a prepositional object (i.e. in it, on it etc.) is neither *het* nor *hern* but *er* + preposition. The form is analogous to English therein, thereon etc.

I put my money in it. — *Ik heb er mijn geld in gestopt.*

This division of the prepositional object is generally more common in colloquial Dutch than the following:

Ik heb mijn geld erin gestopt.

When separate the *er* must go immediately after the finite verb and the preposition to the end of the clause, but before infinitives and past participles.

De studenten hebben er de hele dag aan gedacht.

Negatives precede the preposition:

Wij willen er de bladeren niet in doen.

It should be noted that a form such as *erop* etc. can also be translated by 'on them'. Whenever 'them' preceded by a preposition refers to things, it must be translated in this way.

Here are three knives. Will you peel the oranges with them?

Hier hebben jullie drie messen. Willen jullie er de sinaasappels mee schillen?

For further functions of *er* see p. 236.

5 *Die* as a referential pronoun

a The demonstrative *die* is very commonly used in Dutch as a substitute for *hij/hem*, *zij/haar*, *zij/hen/hun* with varying connotations of meaning. Except in questions the clause always begins with *die*; sometimes it is stressed and thus serves as an emphatic pronoun, and in other cases it acts as an unemphatic pronoun.

Is Bob er nog niet? Nee, die komt niet. (unstressed) = *hij*

Ik weet het niet maar die weten het wel. (stressed) = *zij* (they)

Heb je Marie gesproken? Nee, die heb ik helemaal niet gezien.

(stressed or unstressed) = *haar*

Hebben die dat gedaan? (stressed or unstressed) = *zij* (they)

b It should be noticed that *die* appears in the list of object pronouns on p. 00 as the stressed form of *ze* (them) referring to things: the emphatic forms *hen/hun* can refer only to people and *ze*, which can be used for people or things, is by definition unemphatic; when stressing 'them' referring to inanimate objects, one must use *die*.

Hebben jullie de appels gegeten die ik vanochtend gekocht heb?

Nee, die hebben we niet gegeten.

c *Die* can also be a handy means of avoiding the difficulties caused by pronominal substitution of *hij/hem* or *het* mentioned under 8.1.2.3, d and 8.1.2.4, c.

Hij heeft zijn auto aan de kant van de weg laten staan want hij wist dat die daar veilig zou staan.

(here *die* replaces *hij* which could be ambiguous)

6 English difficulties with subject and object pronouns

a Due to the subject and object forms of 'you' being the same in English, confusion as to whether to use *jij* or *jou* in Dutch can arise in instances like the following:

He is bigger than you.

Hij is groter dan jij.

I like him more than you.

Ik vind hem aardiger dan jou.

If I were you.

Als ik jou was.

b Because of the confusion in the usage of 'I' and 'me' in colloquial English, a confusion which does not often occur in Dutch, the following mistakes are sometimes made:

He is bigger than me (= I).

Hij is groter dan ik. (never mij)

Robert gave some money to Jan and I (= me).

Robert gaf wat geld aan Jan en mij.

7 The use of 'to' in English before pronominal indirect objects.

Note the use or lack of *aan* in the following examples:

She gave it to the man.

Zij gaf het aan de man.

She gave him the book.

Zij gaf hem het boek (de man het boek)

She gave it to him

Zij gaf het hem

Zij gaf het aan hem.

(when emphasised)

Note: She gave it to them.

Zij gaf het hun.

Zij gaf het aan hen.

(when emphasised)

8.2 Possessive pronouns (*bezittelijke voornaamwoorden*)

mijn (m'n)

jouw je

uw

*zijn*⁷ (z'n)

*haar*⁸ (d'r)

zijn (z'n)

ons/onze

jullie je

uw

*hun*⁹ (d'r)

} See also p. 51 for unemphatic forms

7 In formal style *diens* may replace the masculine possessive *zijn* (see p. 26)

De gouverneur-generaal van Nederlands-Indië en diens echtgenote.

The governor-general of the Dutch East Indies and his wife.

8 Neuter words referring to female beings (eg. *het meisje*, *het wijf*) usually take feminine possessive pronouns but can be replaced by neuter pronouns in formal style.

Het meisje heeft haar grootmoeder lekkere dingen gebracht/Het meisje heeft zijn grootmoeder bezocht.

9 In formal style *haar* can replace the possessive form *hun* when it refers to a feminine plural.

De dames hebben haar handtassen achtergelaten.

This explains why the unemphatic form of possessive *hun* is *d'r*.

8.2.1 INFLECTION OF POSSESSIVES

a Only *ons* is inflected (i.e. becomes *onze*) before singular common gender nouns and before all plurals,

onze vriend, onze boeken but ons boek.

b In very formal style all possessives can take *-e* before feminine singular nouns and plural nouns,

Uwe Excellentie

Your Excellency

Hare Majesteit

Her Majesty

Mijne Heren

Dear Sirs

c Possessives sometimes take case endings in formal style or in standard expressions that have preserved such archaisms.

een uwer afgevaardigden

one of your representatives

(genitive plural)

mijs inziens

in my opinion

(masculine genitive singular)

te zijner tijd

in the course of time

(feminine dative singular)

8.2.2 COLLOQUIAL POSSESSIVES

Expressions such as *de auto van mijn broer/mijn broers auto*, *het huis van mijn moeder/mijn moeders huis*, *de kleren van die mensen*, have an alternative form which one often hears but usually avoids in writing

mijn broer z'n auto

mijn moeder d'r huis

die mensen d'r kleren/die mensen hun kleren

Masculine antecedents use *z'n* (i.e. *zijn*) and *d'r* is used for feminine singular and plural antecedents while *hun* is used for masculine and feminine plural antecedents. (see p. 42)

8.2.3 In conversational style *die z'n* and *die d'r* can replace *zijn* and *haar*.

Die z'n vriend is een vreemd figuur

His friend is a strange person

Die d'r man studeert in Leiden

Her husband is studying in Leiden.

(see also relative pronouns on p. 65-66)

8.2.4 REPLACEMENT OF POSSESSIVES BY REFLEXIVE PRONOUNS

Occasionally the possessive is replaced by a reflexive pronoun or object pronoun where parts of the body are concerned; the part of the body is then preceded by the definite article.

Hij heeft zich in de vinger gesneden.

or

Hij heeft in zijn vinger gesneden.

De slang heeft hem in het been gebeten.

or

De slang heeft in zijn been gebeten.

It is not, however, incorrect to use the reflexive and the possessive pronoun together, eg. *Hij heeft zich in zijn vinger gesneden, de slang heeft hem in zijn been gebeten.*

8.2.5 INDEPENDENT POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS

	Formal	Usual
mine	<i>de/het mijne</i>	<i>(die/dat) van mij</i>
yours	<i>de/het jouwe</i>	<i>(die/dat) van jou</i>
yours	<i>de/het uwe</i>	<i>(die/dat) van u</i>
his	<i>de/het zijne</i>	<i>(die/dat) van hem</i>
hers	<i>de/het hare</i>	<i>(die/dat) van haar</i>
its	<i>de/het zijne</i>	
ours	<i>de/het onze</i>	<i>(die/dat) van ons</i>
yours		<i>(die/dat) van jullie¹⁰</i>
theirs	<i>de/het hunne</i>	<i>(die/dat) van hen</i>

a The formal forms can be used in conversation too although *de/het hunne* sounds particularly stilted.

Here is my car. Where is yours?

Hier staat mijn auto. Waar staat de jouwe?

or

Waar staat die van jou?

Your house is very nice but have you seen mine?

Jouw huis is erg mooi maar heb je het mijne gezien?

or

Heb je dat van mij gezien?

¹⁰ *jullie* has only the one form

This is hers and that is theirs.

Dit is de hare en dat is de hunne.

or

Dit is van haar en dat is van hen.

b Note that 'a friend of yours/ours/theirs etc.' is rendered in Dutch by using this construction:

een vriend van jou/van ons/van hen.

Compare: a friend of my mother's – *een vriend van mijn moeder.*

c The formal forms are sometimes found with -n in the sense of 'you and yours' (i.e. your family) etc.

Hij en de zijnen kwamen de avond bij ons doorbrengen.

8.3 Reflexive pronouns (*wederkerende voornaamwoorden*)

Reflexive pronouns, both with and without verbs, plus the use of *zelf* and *eigen* are dealt with under reflexive verbs. (see p. 171)

8.4 Demonstrative pronouns (*aanwijzende voornaamwoorden*)

8.4.1 The demonstratives *deze/dit* and *die/dat* (see p. 26) can also be used pronominally just as 'this/these' and 'that/those' can be in English (usually this one, these ones etc., however).

Die stoel was duur maar deze was erg goedkoop.

That chair was expensive but this one was very cheap.

Dat (referring to huis) heb ik gisteren gekocht.

I bought that (one) yesterday.

8.4.2 There is also a pronominal usage of *dit* and *dat* (compare also *het* p. 55) which differs greatly from English: *dit* and *dat* (and *het*) can be followed by a plural form of *zijn* and can refer to a plural quantity in which case they replace English 'they, these and those'.

Dat zijn Duitsers.

They are Germans.

Dat (dit) zijn de enige die ik heb kunnen vinden.

Those (these) are the only ones I was able to find.

As with *het* (see p. 55) *dit* and *dat* can only be used in this way if the complement following *zijn* is a noun or adjective used as a noun, otherwise *zij* or *die* are used.

Zij (die) zijn erg duur.
They are very expensive.
Zij (die) zijn nu op.
They have all gone now.

8.4.3 Independent demonstrative pronouns are not usually¹¹ preceded by prepositions; *hier* + preposition replaces *dit*, and *daar* + preposition replaces *dat*.

Stop het hierin.
Put it in this.
Ik heb het daarmee (= daar + met) geschreven.
I wrote it with that.

These forms are also separable.

Daar heb ik het mee geschreven.
I wrote it with that. (emphasised)

The adverbial expressions of time *daarna* (after that, afterwards), *daarop* (after that, thereupon) and *daarvoor* (before that) are not separated.

Kort daarna vertrokken wij.
Shortly after that we left.

8.5 Relative pronouns (*betrekkelijke voornaamwoorden*)

8.5.1 DIFFICULTIES WITH ENGLISH RELATIVES

English very often omits relative pronouns (actually only when they are objects, never when subject pronouns) but they must always be used in Dutch. In addition there is often a choice of relative in English.

The man I saw yesterday is sick.
The man whom/that/which I saw yesterday is sick.
De man die ik gisteren zag, is ziek.

The person I gave the letter to has left.
The person that/whom I gave the letter to has left.
The person to whom I gave the letter has left.
De persoon aan wie ik de brief gaf, is weg.

11 Occasionally they are preceded by prepositions when qualified.

Wat jij voorstelt past niet bij dit alles.
What you are suggesting doesn't fit in with all of this.
Vergeleken met dat van mij...
Compared with mine...

8.5.2 THE SIMPLE RELATIVE IN DUTCH

Die is the relative pronoun used for common gender nouns in the singular, and for both common gender and neuter nouns in the plural.
Dat is used for neuter nouns in the singular.

De man die hier woont, is ziek. Common gender
De mannen die hier wonen, zijn ziek.
Het boek dat ik nu lees, is oud. Neuter
De boeken die ik nu lees, zijn oud.

Note: 1 *Die/dat* are pronouns because within their own clause they stand for a noun. In English they are 'who/which/that'.
2 They are relative because they relate back to the preceding word.
3 The finite verb in relative clauses is sent to the end of that clause.
4 If a comma is used at all, it follows the relative clause. In shorter sentences like the above it can be omitted.

8.5.3 RELATIVE PRONOUNS PRECEDED BY PREPOSITIONS

a When a preposition occurs before a relative pronoun of common gender, the pronoun *wie* is used instead of *die* when it refers to a person.

De man met wie ik in de winkel stond te praten, was mijn oom.

This sentence can be translated as follows:

- 1 The man with whom I was talking in the shop was my uncle.
- 2 The man whom I was talking with in the shop was my uncle.
- 3 The man I was talking with in the shop was my uncle.

In archaic style a dative form *wie* (older *wien*) without a preposition can occur. This form was used until quite recently.

De man wie het gegeven werd, is verdwenen.
The man to whom it was given has disappeared.

b When a preposition is used before a relative pronoun relating to a **thing**, whether it be a *de* or *het* word, *waar-* plus the preposition is used:

De tafel waarop het brood ligt, is van mij.

This can be translated as follows:

- 1 The table on which the bread is lying is mine.
- 2 The table which the bread is lying on is mine.
- 3 The table the bread is lying on is mine.

Note: There is, however, in this instance a second variation in word order in Dutch. This is in fact the more common of the two. In this case the preposition is sent to the end of the relative clause where it is placed before the verb which has also been relegated to the end of the clause.

De tafel waar het brood op ligt, is van mij.

Further examples using a neuter noun and a plural where the construction is precisely the same:

Het brood waar ik van hou, is niet verkrijgbaar. – Neuter noun.

De bedden waar de katten onder slapen, zijn oud. – Plural noun.

c In conversation it is also common to use the *waar* + preposition construction referred to in b for people.

De man waarmee (= met wie) ik in de winkel stond te praten, is mijn oom.

or *De man waar ik in de winkel mee stond te praten, is mijn oom.*

8.5.4 RELATIVES WITH INDEFINITE ANTECEDENTS – USE OF *WAT*

<i>niets wat</i>	nothing (which/that) you say ...
<i>iets wat</i>	something (which/that) you say ...
<i>veel wat</i>	much (of what) you say ...
<i>alles wat</i>	everything (which/that) you say ...
<i>dat wat</i> ¹²	that which you say ... (see p. 66)
<i>het enige wat,</i>	the only thing (which/that) (see p. 71)
<i>het laatste wat</i>	the last thing (which/that)

Sometimes the antecedent of *wat* is an entire clause:

Hij heeft zijn auto total loss gereden, wat ik erg jammer vind.

He wrecked his car, which I think is a great shame.

8.5.5 WORD ORDER IN RELATIVE CLAUSES

Sending the verb to the end of the relative clause sometimes confuses English speakers who are used to the relative immediately following the noun to which it refers. One can keep the antecedent and the relative together in Dutch (note the obligatory comma in such cases), as the following examples illustrate, but that is not usually the case.

a *Ik heb hem het lijstje gestuurd dat je me gegeven hebt.*

This word order is preferable to the following although what follows is not incorrect.

Ik heb hem het lijstje dat je me gegeven hebt, gestuurd.

b *Laat me dat hondje eens zien dat je gekocht hebt.*

Here the distance between the relative and its antecedent is greater and the speaker may prefer:

Laat me dat hondje dat je gekocht hebt, eens zien.

Either is, however, still possible.

c *Ik kan een kast toch moeilijk afsluiten waar jij de sleutel van hebt.*

Here the distance is so great that the following would be preferred:

Ik kan een kast waar jij de sleutel van hebt, toch moeilijk afsluiten.

8.5.6 WHOSE

1	2	3
<i>wiens</i> (for masculine antecedents)	<i>van wie/waarvan</i>	<i>die z'n</i>
<i>wier</i> (for feminine & plural antecedents)	<i>van wie/waarvan</i>	<i>die d'r</i>
<i>welks</i> (for non-personal antecedents)	<i>waarvan</i>	<i>waarvan</i>

The forms given in column 1 are only found in the written language, *wiens* being somewhat more common than *wier* or *welks* which are regarded as particularly archaic.

Usually the forms in column 2 replace those in 1 in writing and speech and those in column 3 are restricted to the spoken language.

(written)	<i>De man wiens boek ik geleend heb, is ziek.</i>
(spoken & written)	<i>De man van wie ik het boek geleend heb, is ziek.</i>
	(Note the new word order)
(spoken)	<i>De man die z'n boek ik geleend heb, is ziek.</i>
(written)	<i>Het huis welks dak ingestort is, is gisteren verkocht.</i>
(spoken & written)	<i>Het huis waarvan het dak ingestort is, is gisteren verkocht.</i>
or	<i>Het huis waar het dak van ingestort is, is gisteren verkocht.</i>

8.5.7 PREPOSITION PLUS WHOSE

a As we have seen 'whose' is normally expressed in Dutch by *van wie* or *waarvan*. A complication arises, however, when one is confronted with a sentence like the following:

The man in whose chair I am sitting is my uncle.

It is impossible to have *in* and *van* together. In such an instance *wiens*, although stilted when used as above, is somewhat more common when a preposition is involved.

De man in wiens stoel ik zit, is mijn oom.

But *wier*, as in *De vrouw in wier stoel ik zit, is mijn tante* is very rare.

In speech the following would be used:

De man in wie z'n stoel ik zit, ...
De vrouw in wie d'r stoel ik zit, ...
De mensen in wie d'r stoel ik zit, ...

In writing, if one wants to avoid *wiens* and *wier*, the following would be preferable:

De man/vrouw/mensen in de stoel van wie ik zit, ...

b A preposition + whose, when the antecedent is a thing, i.e. not a person, also causes complications if one wishes to avoid using *welks*. Once again, as with *wiens*, *welks* is sometimes found in the formal written language when preceded by a preposition:

Het huis op welks dak de kat de hele nacht heeft gezeten, is ingestort.

This would not be said in the spoken language, however. Then the following would be more usual:

Het huis waar de kat de hele nacht op het dak (van) gezeten heeft, is ingestort.

The *van* is not necessary and would usually be omitted.

8.5.8 INDEPENDENT RELATIVES

These are relatives that begin sentences and thus have no antecedent: *die/wie*¹³ – he who; *wat* – that which, what; *hetgeen* – that which, what. They could also be regarded as indefinite pronouns.

Wie (die) eens steelt, is voor altijd een dief.
 He who steals is branded a thief forever.
Wie (die) komen wil, moet nu betalen.
 Whoever¹⁴ wants to come must pay now.
Wat je zegt is allemaal onzin.
 What (that which) you're saying is simply nonsense.

Here the meaning is *dat wat*. This *wat* is commonly replaced in the written language by *hetgeen* (say: 't geen).

Hetgeen je doet is gevaarlijk.
 What (that which) you are doing is dangerous.
Hetgeen ik zeggen wil is dit.
 What (that which) I want to say is the following.

¹³ *die* is rather literary

¹⁴ *degene(n) die* is common in this sense too (see indefinite pronouns p. 70)

8.5.9 LESS COMMON RELATIVES

a The relative *hetgeen* commonly replaces in writing the *wat* which refers back to a whole clause; it is, however, an archaic form (see p. 64).

Hij heeft zijn auto total loss gereden, hetgeen ik erg jammer vind.

In this sense *hetwelk* (also written 't *welk*) can also be used; this form is also archaic.

De eendracht is in het land hersteld, hetwelk (hetgeen) de gehele bevolking met vreugde vervult.

b Historically related to *hetwelk* (and *welks* which was dealt with earlier) is the relative *welk(e)* which often replaces *die* in formal writing:

De regering welke (die) dat bekendgemaakt heeft, is gisteren afgetreden.
De idealen welke (die) eertijds de jeugd bezielde, doen ons soms glimlachen.

c A further common usage of *welk(e)* which cannot be avoided, even in speech, is the following adjectival relative:

Hij zei dat hij alles begrepen had, welke opmerking ik niet de moeite waard vond tegen te spreken.
Max Havelaar, welk boek (welke roman) ik op mijn veertiende jaar leerde kennen, vind ik nog steeds prachtig.

8.5.10 ADJECTIVAL ADJUNCTS REPLACING RELATIVE CLAUSES

In formal style, and often in journalese, one finds on occasions an avoidance of relative clauses by placing the information usually contained in the relative clause before the noun it refers to as one does an adjective. The adjunct always contains a present or past participle (or occasionally an infinitive – see last example).

Het boek dat ik gisteren inbond, heb ik aan mijn beste vriend gegeven.
Het gisteren door mij ingebonden boek heb ik aan mijn beste vriend gegeven.
Hij heeft een rijksdaalder gevonden in de boekenkast die hij gemaakt heeft.
Hij heeft een rijksdaalder gevonden in de door hem gemaakte boekenkast.
De bomen die in dit park staan zijn allemaal eiken.
De in dit park staande bomen zijn allemaal eiken.
Het bedrag dat u nog betalen moet.
Het nog door u te betalen bedrag.

Some adjectival adjuncts can be of unwieldy length as the following extreme example taken from a newspaper illustrates:

De in 1949 wegens collaboratie en roven van kunstschaten tot 8 maanden gevangenisstraf veroordeelde nu 77 jaar oude Blaricumse miljonair Pieter Menten, heeft het land weten te ontvluchten.

Relative clauses must be used in English when translating such adjectival adjuncts. (see p. 164)

8.5.11 Under (10) examples of Dutch participial constructions which are rendered by relative clauses in English are given. There are, however, **participial constructions in English** which must be translated by relative clauses in Dutch.

The houses built in the fifties are noisy.

De huizen die in de jaren vijftig gebouwd zijn, zijn gehorig.

This could also be rendered by an adjectival adjunct:

De in de jaren vijftig gebouwde huizen zijn gehorig.

De man reading the paper in the corner of the room is seriously ill.

De man die in de hoek de krant zit te lezen, is ernstig ziek.

8.5.12 See note 3 on use of *dat*, p. 194.

8.6 Indefinite pronouns (*onbepaalde voornaamwoorden*)

One

The English pronoun 'one' has an exact equivalent in Dutch which is *men*. Like its English counterpart, *men* belongs more in formal speech and writing than in everyday language. In conversation it is commonly replaced by unstressed *je* or *ze* (i.e. they, see p. 165). It differs from English, however, in that *men* can only serve as a subject pronoun; when the object is needed, *je* (i.e. unstressed *jou*) or *iemand* is used in colloquial style; in formal style a passive is often used. (see p. 161)

If a teacher finds one in a classroom at lunchtime one is punished.

Als een leraar je tussen de middag in een klaslokaal vindt, word je gestraft.

The possessive pronoun 'one's' is rendered by *zijn* and the reflexive 'oneself' by *zich*.

One has to pay one's taxes every year.

Men moet jaarlijks zijn belasting betalen.

Everyone, -body

The most usual word is *iedereen*. Occasionally just *ieder* is used. In more formal style *een ieder* and *elkeen* are also found.

Someone, -body; anyone, -body; no-one, -body

The subtle distinction between 'someone' and 'anyone' does not exist in Dutch; both are rendered by *iemand*. When 'anyone' is used with a negative in English, Dutch simply uses *niemand* (nobody).

Heb je iemand gezien?

Did you see anyone?

Ja, ik heb iemand gezien.

Yes, I saw someone.

Nee, ik heb niemand gezien.

No, I didn't see anyone (i.e. I saw nobody).

Iemand and *niemand* also have a genitive form *iemands* and *niemands*, eg. *iemands pet* – somebody's cap.

'Somebody else' is *iemand anders*.

'Somebody else's cap' – *iemand anders z'n pet* (spoken)

de pet van iemand anders (written)

also – *andermans pet* (written)

Something; anything; nothing

(see also *ergens*, *nergens* and *overal* p. 71)

The situation here is similar to that above: 'something/anything' are rendered by *iets* or more colloquially by *wat*; 'nothing' is *niets* or in the spoken language *niks*.

Heeft ze iets/wat gekocht?

Did she buy anything?

Ja, ze heeft iets/wat gekocht.

Yes, she bought something.

Nee, ze heeft niets gekocht.

No, she didn't buy anything. (i.e. she bought nothing)

For *iets/wat* and *niets* followed by an adjective see p. 77.

Note: *iets* and *wat* also render the adverb 'somewhat'.

Whoever; whatever (see p. 203)

Wie... ook and *wat... ook* translate the above.

Wie er ook komt, wij zullen voor hen kunnen zorgen.

Whoever comes, we will be able to take care of them.

Alwie (whoever) and *alwat* (whatever) are sometimes used in the written language.

Note: *Wie dat zegt is een leugenaar.*

Whoever (= he who) says that is a liar. (see p. 66)

die is used in formal style instead of *wie*.

Many, several, various, some, others, a few

<i>veel, vele(n)</i>	much, many
<i>verscheidene(n)</i>	several
<i>ettelijke(n)</i>	several
<i>verschillende(n)</i>	various
<i>sommige(n)</i>	some
<i>andere(n)</i>	others
<i>enkele(n)</i>	a few
<i>een paar</i>	
<i>degene(n) die,</i>	the one who/which, those who/which
<i>hetgene dat</i>	that which; what

With the exception of *een paar* all words in this category (plus also *alle* and *beide* – see below) add -n when they are used independently referring to people. All but the last two can also be used as adjectives before nouns, in which case they do not add -n, nor when used independently referring to things.

Verscheidene mensen willen niet komen.
Sommigen blijven thuis maar anderen gaan naar de bioscoop.
Ik heb vandaag een paar boeken gekocht. Ik heb er ook enkele gekocht.

Note that *vele* when used attributively before a plural noun can also be *veel*; eg. *veel kinderen, veel boeken.*

The form *veel* can also be used independently when referring to non-animate things.

Veel (winkels understood) hebben moeten sluiten.
but
Velen (mensen understood) hebben moeten gaan.

Both

a The basic word for 'both' is *beide*. It is used in the same way as the expressions given above, i.e. *beide mensen; beide boeken; beide (boeken understood) waren duur; beiden (mensen understood) zijn vertrokken.*

b In addition, there is a form *allebei* which is used to translate 'both of us/you/them' – also used with nominal subjects and objects.

Ze gaan allebei naar de markt.
 They are both going/both of them are going to the market.
Ik heb ze allebei in de stad gezien.
 I saw them both/both of them in town.

c Expressions such as 'both the brothers' can be translated as follows: *de twee broers, beide broers* or *de broers gaan allebei naar de markt.*

All (see also *ergens, nergens* and *overal* below)

The way in which 'all' is translated into Dutch is similar to the way in which 'both' is translated (see above).

a The basic word is *alle* and is used like the expressions dealt with above, i.e. *alle mensen, alle boeken, alle (boeken understood) waren duur, allen (mensen understood) hebben moeten gaan.*

b In addition, there is a form *allemaal* which is used to translate 'all of us/you/them'.

Ze gaan allemaal naar de markt.
 They are all going to the market. (or All of them are going...)
Ik heb ze allemaal in de stad gezien.
 I saw all of them in town. (or them all)

Note: the word *allemaal* is also used very idiomatically in spoken Dutch with a variety of meanings only vaguely related to the literal meaning.

Ik kan dat allemaal niet begrijpen.
 I can't understand any of that.

c Expressions such as 'all the men' can be translated in three ways: *al de mannen, alle mannen* or *de mannen zijn er allemaal geweest.*

d Note that ambiguity of the following English 'all':

That's all I can tell you i.e. everything or the only thing.

The first meaning is translated as *dat is alles* (or even *al*) *wat ik je vertellen kan* and the second as *dat is het enige wat ik je vertellen kan.*
 In practice, however, *alles* is used in both cases.

e Note that *alles* means 'everything' and *al* usually means 'already' (see c and d above for exceptions).

Pronominal use of *ergens, nergens* and *overal*

These three words which are usually used as adverbs rendering English 'somewhere/somewhat', 'nowhere' and 'everywhere' also have a pronominal function: when *iets* (something), *niets* (nothing) and *alles* (everything) are preceded by a preposition, they are often replaced (particularly in speech) by *ergens, nergens* and *overal* respectively and the preposition follows these words.

*Hij kijkt ergens naar.*¹⁵
 He is looking at something.

¹⁵ Note the following adverbial use of *ergens*: *Ergens heeft hij wel gelijk* – Somehow he is right.

Ik heb hem nergens van verteld.
I told him about nothing.
Je kunt het overal mee doen.
You can do it with anything.

Should the indefinite pronoun be followed by a relative clause, however, those alternative forms can't be used (see p. 64).

Hij kijkt naar iets wat ik gemaakt heb.
He is looking at something I have made.
Je kunt het doen met alles wat je vinden kunt.
You can do it with anything you can find.

8.7 Interrogative pronouns (*vragende voornaamwoorden*)

(For Interrogative Adverbs see p. 203)

8.7.1 WHO; TO WHOM, FROM WHOM ETC.

The interrogative pronoun 'who' is *wie*, eg. *Wie is je leraar?* Questions involving 'who' plus prepositions are always posed as follows: *Aan wie heb je het schrift gegeven?* To whom did you give the exercise book? English usually employs the word order 'Who(m) did you give the book to?' This order is not possible in Dutch.

Who(m) did you get those scissors from?
Van wie heb je die schaar gekregen?

English speakers must be careful not to confuse the interrogative 'who' in indirect questions (i.e. *wie* in Dutch) with the relative pronoun 'who' (i.e. *die* or *waar* in Dutch, see p. 63)

Ik weet niet wie het gedaan heeft. (indirect interrogative)
Hij is degene die het gedaan heeft. (relative)

8.7.2 WHOSE

The possessive interrogative pronoun 'whose' is *wiens* or *van wie*.

Wiens boek is dit? (lit.)
Van wie is dit boek? Whose book is this?
Wie z'n boek is dit? (spoken language)

When the reference is obviously to a female being or plural beings, the written language also knows the form *wier*, and the spoken language *wie d'r* for feminine beings.

Wie d'r b.h. is dit?
Whose bra is this?

8.7.3 WHAT

a 'What' is *wat* but when used in combination with a preposition it is replaced by *waar* + preposition which can also be separated.

Wat heb je gedaan?
What have you done?
Waarmee heb je het gedaan?/Waar heb je het mee gedaan?
What did you do it with?

b 'What kind/sort of a' is rendered by the idiom *wat voor een*.

Wat voor een auto heb je?/Wat heb je voor een auto?
What sort of car do you have?

c Sometimes English 'what' is rendered by *hoe* in Dutch (see p. 109).

What time is it?
Hoe laat is het?
What is your name?
Hoe is uw naam?/Hoe heet u?

d Sometimes English 'what' means 'which' (see 8.7.4 below)

8.7.4 WHICH

Dutch *welk(e)* can be used attributively before nouns or independently. English often uses 'what' in this sense too.

Welk boek (welke film, welke mensen) heb je gezien?
Welke heb je gekocht?
Which/what ones did you buy?
Welk (boek understood) heb je gekocht?
Which/what one did you buy?

9 Adjectives (*bijvoeglijke naamwoorden*)

9.1 Rules for inflection (*verbuiging*)

An adjective used attributively (i.e. before the noun) will always take an *-e* ending except in the following cases:

a Before a singular neuter noun preceded by *een, elk, geen, ieder, menig, veel, zo'n, zulk*. In addition one still finds omission of the *-e* inflection after possessive pronouns (i.e. *mijn, jouw, zijn, ons* etc.) but nowadays the ending is more commonly used than not, i.e. *ons kleine land* rather than *ons klein land* (lit.).

It should be noted that in expressions such as 'Jan's big house' Jan's acts as a possessive adjective and thus the adjective following it is inflected, i.e. *Jans grote huis*.

b Before singular neuter nouns preceded by nothing, i.e. *oud brood, zoet water*. Note that in **all** other cases an ending is required, eg. *het oude brood, zulke oude huizen, stoute kinderen, dat stomme ding* etc.

Predicative adjectives (i.e. those not used before nouns as in 'the book is green') never inflect in Dutch.

9.1.1 There are numerous cases where an adjective does **not** take an *-e* ending where you would expect one according to the rules above:

a Adjectives ending in *-en*, which includes materials (eg. *houten, zilveren, open, eigen*) and strong past participles (eg. *gesloten, vertrokken, opgeblazen*).

Exception: *verscheidene* (several) always takes *-e*.

When adjectival past participles ending in *-en* are used as nouns they take *-e* (*-en* in plural), eg. *de betrokkene* etc.

b A limited number of adjectives do not take *-e* but are affixed to the following noun instead (see pp. 91).

c Some adjectives of foreign origin are indeclinable: *beige, crème, lila, nylon, oranje, plastic*¹, *platina, aluminium, rose*.

¹ Nowadays one also commonly hears *plèstikke* or *plestiéke* before nouns.

d Place name adjectives in *-er*: *Groninger koek, Haarlemmer olie*.

e Comparatives of more than three syllables: *interessanter, belangrijker*. One will often hear such comparatives being inflected in the spoken language, however (see p. 78).

f A few adjectives take on a figurative meaning if uninflected: *oud-soldaat* = ex-soldier, *een groot man* = a great man (but *een grote vrouw*).

g The adjectives *rechts* and *links* have their own peculiar form in *-er* and are often written as one word, particularly when referring to parts of the body and items of clothing: *de rechterhand, de linkerschoen*; also *de linkeroever, rechterkant, linkerzijde*.

Preceding other nouns they behave as normal adjectives: *rechts verkeer, de linkse partijen*.

h It is very common for adjectives preceding nouns referring to human beings (particularly masculine beings) to be left uninflected after articles. One is advised only to copy those one has heard or read and otherwise to apply the ending, eg. *de waarnemend burgemeester* (the acting mayor), *de tijdelijk zaakgelastigde* (the temporary chargé d'affaires), *een bekwaam musicus* (a competent musician), *een vroom man* (a pious man), *een beroemd schrijfster* (a famous authoress), *Geyl is een bekend Nederlands historicus* (Geyl is a famous Dutch historian).

i The adjective does not inflect after *een, geen, zo'n* etc. before the common gender noun *iemand*, eg. *een belangrijk iemand* — an important person.

Note: *een aardig mens* — a nice person can only refer to a female.

j There is a long list of nouns, particularly neuter nouns, which, even when preceded by the singular definite article, do not inflect the preceding adjective as one would expect according to the rules given above. The adjective and the noun are regarded as a compound in such cases. In the plural the adjective is, however, inflected, eg. *het akademisch ziekenhuis, de academische ziekenhuizen*.

The following list is not complete but will serve to illustrate the concept:

<i>het akademisch ziekenhuis</i>	<i>het medisch onderzoek</i>
<i>het centraal station</i>	<i>het menselijk lichaam</i>
<i>het cultureel akkoord</i>	<i>het noordelijk halfrond</i>
<i>het dagelijks leven</i>	<i>het noordoostelijk deel</i>
<i>het economisch herstel</i>	<i>het openbaar vervoer</i>
<i>het Engels Instituut</i>	<i>het sociaal pakket</i>
<i>het geestelijk leven</i>	<i>het stedelijk museum</i>
<i>het Gents Advertentieblad</i>	<i>het stoffelijk overschot</i>
<i>het heilig sakrament</i>	<i>het uitvoerend orgaan</i>
<i>het Koninklijk Gezin</i>	<i>het zelfrijzend bakmeel</i>

The parts of speech also belong in this category, eg. *het bijvoeglijk naamwoord, het wederkerend werkwoord* etc.

9.1.2 Inflection often causes spelling changes in accordance with the phonetic spelling rules of Dutch.

a Adjectives with *aa, ee, oo* and *uu*, drop one vowel, eg. *kaal* – *kale*, *geel* – *gele*, *groot* – *grote*, *duur* – *dure*. Those ending in *-ieel* add a diaeresis, eg. *officieel* – *officiële*. Note also that past participles used adjectively are also subject to this rule, eg. *gehaat* (from *haten* – to hate) – *gehate*, *vergroot* (from *vergroten* – to enlarge) – *vergroete*.

b In adjectives with a long vowel or a diphthong and ending in *-f*, the *f* changes to *v* (i.e. the *f* becomes voiced between two vowels), eg. *lief* – *lieve*, *braaf* – *brave*, *doof* – *dove*.²

A word such as *laf* goes *laffe*, however, because it contains a short vowel (see rule d).

c Adjectives with a long vowel or diphthong and ending in *-s* change to *z* (i.e. voicing because of its intervocalic position), eg. *vies* – *vieze*, *dwaas* – *dwaze*. There are a few isolated exceptions to this rule, however, eg. *kies* – *kiese*, *overzees* – *overzeese*, *hees* – *hese*, *kuis* – *kuise*, *histories* – *historiese* (see p. 17), *Parijs* – *Parijse*.

Adjectives of nationality ending in *-ees* go *-ese*, eg. *Chinees* – *Chinese*, also *Fries* – *Friese* (as plural nouns they take *z*, eg. *Chinezen*, *Friezen*).

d Adjectives with a short vowel ending in a consonant double the consonant to keep the vowel short, eg. *dik* – *dikke*, *laf* – *laffe*, *wit* – *witte*, *tam* – *tamme*, *dun* – *dunne*, *fris* – *frisse*.

Exceptions: *grof* – *grove*, *bros* – *broze* (often pronounced *groffe* and *brosse*, however).

e Adjectives with a long vowel or diphthong ending in *-d* are often pronounced with a vocalised *d*, eg. *rode* – *rooie*, *goed* – *goeie*, *oud* – *ouwe*. They are sometimes written like this too in less formal style.

f Note the adjective *bijdehand* (smart, bright) which goes *bijdehante*.

9.1.3 A limited number of adjectives usually denoting location take *-ste* instead of *-e*.

bovenste, middelste, benedenste; binnenste, buitenste; achterste, voorste, onderste. (Note: *binnenste-buiten* = inside out, *onderste-boven* = upside down, *achterste-voren* = back to front).

In addition one often hears *enigste* instead of *enige* but the former is an analogical form and should be avoided, eg. *Dit is de enigste auto die wij nog hebben*. (This is the only car which we still have.) The words *laatste, zoveelste, hoeveelste* belong here too (see p. 226).

9.1.4 There is also an *-s inflection* of the adjective in Dutch. It is used nowadays in only a limited number of cases. It is always used after *iets/wat* (i.e. something), *niets, veel, allerlei, weinig, een heleboel, wat voor, genoeg*, eg. *iets nieuws* – *something new*, *niets sterkers* – nothing stronger (added here to the comparative), *een heleboel moois*. *Wat heb je nou voor lekkers gekocht?* – What sort of delicious things have you bought?

Er is nog genoeg fraais te bedenken. – There are enough nice things to think of.

Note: *wat* and *iets* can mean 'something' or 'somewhat'; with the latter meaning followed by an adjective, no *-s* is added, eg. *Het ziet er wat nieuw uit* – It looks somewhat new.

9.1.5 Formerly there was a complete paradigm of strong and weak adjectival endings for all four cases, as is still the case in German. The above rules for *-e* and *-s* inflection are in fact all that is left of these declensions except for those endings preserved in standard expressions and those found in older literary texts, eg. *op heterdaad* – red-handed (dative), *te allen tijde* – always (dative), *in koelen bloede* – in cold blood (dative); *blootsvoets* – bare-footed (genitive), *grotendeels* – on the whole (genitive), *vol zoeten wijns* (arch.) – full of sweet wine (genitive). The fact that these adjectives are often written together with the noun indicates that they are no longer regarded as inflected adjectives in the normal sense but more as compound nouns.

9.2 The comparative of the adjective (*de vergrotende trap*)

9.2.1 FORMATION OF THE COMPARATIVE:

The comparative is formed, as in English, by adding *-er* to the adjective whereby the same spelling changes apply as for *-e* inflection (see p. 76), eg. *groot* – *groter*, *doof* – *dover*, *vies* – *viezer*, *dik* – *dikker*.

Adjectives ending in *-r* take *-der*, eg. *puur* – *puurder*, *zuiver* – *zuiverder*, *ver* – *verder*. There are two adjectives that have an irregular comparative form, as in English:

goed – *beter* (good – better),
kwaad – *erger* (bad – worse)

Note: *kwaad* meaning 'angry' becomes *kwader*. All other irregular comparatives are actually adverbs (see p. 93).

² both rules a and b applied

9.2.2 INFLECTION OF THE COMPARATIVE

When used attributively comparatives follow the rules for the inflection of simple adjectives, eg. *een grotere jongen, een kleiner huis*.

Comparatives of more than three syllables cannot be inflected although the *-e* ending is commonly heard in such cases, eg. *een belangrijker man, een interessanter geschiedenis*.

It is also quite common for some comparatives of two syllables not to inflect; here one has the choice, however, eg. *mooier boeken dan deze ken ik niet; na korter of langer tijd*.

The rules for *-s* inflection also apply to comparatives, eg. *iets groters* – something bigger.

9.2.3 USE OF MEER WITH THE COMPARATIVE

In English the comparative of longer adjectives is formed by placing 'more' before the word rather than by adding *-er*, eg. more important, more interesting. As a general rule one can say that this is not the case in Dutch, eg. *belangrijker, interessanter*. The comparative with *meer* is, however, known in Dutch but is seldom compulsory and should thus be avoided if in doubt, eg. *succesvoller* or *meer succesvol, typischer* or *meer typisch* (often used with adjectives ending in *-isch*). It is often used before adjectives of nationality, eg. *meer Hollands* (= more Dutch, Dutcher, although the latter sounds somewhat peculiar in English) and is also usually used before past participles used as adjectives, eg. *meer geïnteresseerd, meer gewend aan, meer opgewonden*. On occasions *-er* is possible in such cases, eg. *een vervallener huis dan dit is er nauwelijks*.

9.2.4 'MORE AND MORE' CONSTRUCTIONS

Dutch too has the potential to say *meer en meer, dieper en dieper*. It is, however, more common to use *steeds/alsmaar* + comparative, eg. *de hemel wordt steeds blauwer* – the sky is getting bluer and bluer. Another common alternative is *hoe langer hoe* + comparative, eg. *hoe langer hoe blauwer, hij werd hoe langer hoe brutaler* = he got more and more cheeky (as time passed).

9.2.5 ATTRIBUTIVE USE OF COMPARATIVE FORMS

Note the following difference between English and Dutch: the better of the two boys/ the best of the three boys = *de beste van de twee jongens/de beste van de drie jongens*, i.e. no such distinction is made in Dutch. This is not the case after *een*, eg. *ik heb een betere oplossing gevonden* but *mijn oplossing was de beste van de twee* – the better of the two.

The comparative is, however, found after articles and demonstratives in expressions like the following where no direct comparison is being made: *een oudere heer* – an

elderly gentleman, *de jongere generatie* – the younger generation, *de hogere standen* – the upper classes.

9.2.6 'MORE THAN' AND 'AS BIG AS' CONSTRUCTIONS

He is bigger than I – *hij is groter dan ik*. Colloquially one often hears *als*³ instead of *dan* but this should not be copied. The very English error of saying 'she is richer than me' must be avoided in Dutch; a Dutchman would always say *ik*. Similarly in 'He is more important than you' the 'you' is *jij* not *jou*, i.e. subject pronoun. But: *ik vind hem aardiger dan jou*, i.e. object pronoun. (see p. 58)

Note: He is even bigger than I. – *Hij is nog groter dan ik*.

9.3 The superlative of the adjective (*de overtreffende trap*)

9.3.1 FORMATION OF THE SUPERLATIVE

The superlative of the adjective is formed by adding *-st* whereby no change in the spelling takes place, eg. *groot – grootst, doof – doofst, dik – dikst*.

Adjectives ending in *-s* simply add a *-t*, eg. *vies – viest, fris – frist*.

The two adjectives that have an irregular comparative also have an irregular superlative:

goed – beter – best (good – better – best)
kwaad – erger – ergst (bad/evil – worse – worst)

9.3.2 INFLECTION OF SUPERLATIVES

Superlatives used attributively are always inflected regardless of their length, unlike comparatives, eg. *de belangrijkste man, het interessantste verhaal*.

9.3.3 USE OF MEEST WITH SUPERLATIVES

There are certain parallels between the use of *meest* in superlative and the use of *meer* in comparatives. Generally speaking all adjectives, however long, add *-st*, unlike English, eg. most interesting – *interessantst*, most exciting – *opwindendst*. The superlative with *meest* is, however, necessary in Dutch with adjectives ending in *-isch* and *-st*, eg. *typisch – meest typisch, juist – meest juist, robuust – meest robuust*.

For the same phonological reasons adjectives ending in *-s* also sometimes form their superlative in this way, eg. *los – meest los, fris – meest fris*.

3 *Als* is used in expressions such as '(just) as big as I' = *(net) zo groot als ik*. There is an alternative form: *even groot als*.

As with comparatives some longer adjectives such as *succesvol* and *opwindend* will be heard in the superlative with *meest*, although an *-st* ending is also correct. One should, however, only copy examples one has heard or read except for adjectives of nationality and for past participles used as adjectives, eg. *meest Hollands* (most Dutch); *ik ben de meest geïnteresseerde, hij is de meest opgewondene van de groep*. There are in addition some adjectives of foreign origin which can't take an *-st* ending and thus use *meest*, eg. *meest sexy, meest beige*.

9.3.4 USE OF THE SUPERLATIVE

There is one usage of the superlative in Dutch which replaces an English comparative (see p. 78); otherwise it is used as in English.

9.3.5 ABSOLUTE SUPERLATIVES

Dutch knows an adjectival intensifier formed from the superlative, eg. *een alleraardigste man* – a very nice man, *een allerbeste vriend* – a very good friend.

In addition *hoogst* and *uiterst* (actually adverbs) are used to intensify adjectives, eg. *Dat was hoogst interessant* – most interesting⁴, *Dat was uiterst belangrijk* – extremely important.

Here *hoogst* and *uiterst* simply replace 'very'. (see p. 93)

The word *best* is used as an adjectival modifier, eg. *Ik vond het best leuk bij hen* = quite nice; *ik vind het best* – I have no objections.

Best is also used in letters, eg. *Beste Wim* = Dear Wim.

9.3.6 NOTES ON SUPERLATIVES

a Note the following compound adjectives incorporating superlatives:

dichtstbijzijnde (eg. *de dichtstbijzijnde brievenbus*) – closest, *dichtstbijgelegen* – closest.

b There is a small group of adjectives of location which take an *-ste* inflection instead of *-e* and do not thus belong to the realm of superlatives, eg. *middelste, benedenste* etc. (see p. 76)

9.4 Adjectives used only predicatively or attributively

9.4.1 There is a small number of adjectives which can never precede a noun and thus are never inflected, eg. *anders* (different), *zoek* (lost). One says for example *Mijn pen is zoek*, but if one wanted to express this with an attributive adjective, one would need to use another word, eg. *mijn zoekgeraakte pen*. Similarly *verschillend* could replace

anders. In addition the word *stuk* (broken), which is occasionally used before the noun and inflected, is however usually only used predicatively and is better replaced by *kapot* if an attributive adjective is required.

9.4.2 The material adjectives *betonnen, gouden, houten, ijzeren, marmere* etc. can only be used attributively. Predicatively one says *van beton, van goud* etc., eg. this wooden house – *dit houten huis*, this house is wooden – *dit huis is van hout*.

9.5 Predicative adjectives followed by prepositions

It is impossible to give a complete list of such adjectives, particularly of those derived from verbs but the following will serve as a guide. Many have the same preposition as in English. If in doubt, a good dictionary should give which preposition to use. * indicates those derived from verbs (i.e. past participles); these adjectives can either precede or follow the object to which they refer, eg. *ik was zeer in hem geïnteresseerd* or *ik was zeer geïnteresseerd in hem*; *hij is met haar getrouwd* or *hij is getrouwd met haar*. The other adjectives in this list can also follow the object they refer to for particular emphasis, eg. *Met jou ben ik tevreden, tegen mij was hij aardig*.

<i>aardig voor</i>	nice to
<i>aardig tegen</i>	
<i>aannemelijk voor</i>	acceptable to
<i>(on)afhankelijk van</i>	dependent on, (independent of)
<i>afkomstig uit</i>	originating from
<i>allergisch voor</i>	allergic to
<i>analoog aan</i>	analogous to
<i>anders dan</i>	different from
<i>arm aan</i>	poor in
<i>bang voor</i>	afraid of
* <i>bedekt met</i>	covered in, with
<i>begerig naar</i>	desirous of
* <i>begroeid met</i>	overgrown with
* <i>bekend met</i>	acquainted, familiar with
* <i>bekommerd over</i>	worried about
* <i>belast met</i>	in charge of
* <i>bemind om</i>	loved for
<i>benieuwd naar</i>	curious about
* <i>benoemd tot</i>	appointed to
* <i>beroemd om</i>	famous for
* <i>bestemd voor</i>	intended for
* <i>bewust van</i>	aware of
* <i>bezeten van</i>	obsessed with

4 not to be confused with 'the most interesting story' which is *het interessantste verhaal*

* <i>bezorgd over</i>	anxious about
<i>blauw van</i>	blue with
<i>bleek van</i>	pale with
<i>blij met</i>	pleased with
<i>boos op</i>	angry with
<i>dankbaar voor</i>	grateful for
<i>dol op</i>	mad about, keen on
<i>enthousiast over</i>	enthusiastic about
* <i>ervaren in</i>	experienced in
* <i>gedoemd tot</i>	doomed to
* <i>gehecht aan</i>	attached to (fig.)
* <i>gehuwd met</i>	married to
* <i>geïnteresseerd in</i>	interested in
<i>gek op</i>	mad about, keen on
<i>gelijk aan</i>	identical to
<i>gelukkig met</i>	happy with
* <i>geneigd tot</i>	inclined to
* <i>gepiqueerd over</i>	sore at
* <i>getrouwd met</i>	married to
<i>(on)gevoelig voor</i>	(in)sensitive to
<i>goed in</i>	good at
<i>goed voor</i>	good to (s.o.)
* <i>ingenomen met</i>	pleased, taken with
* <i>ingesteld op</i>	orientated, geared to
<i>jaloers op</i>	jealous, envious of ¹
<i>kwaad op</i>	angry with
<i>lelijk tegen</i>	nasty to
<i>links van</i>	to the left of
<i>medeplichtig aan</i>	accessory to
<i>nijdig op</i>	angry with, mad at
<i>noodzakelijk voor</i>	necessary for, to
* <i>omgeven door</i>	surrounded by
* <i>omringd door</i>	surrounded by
* <i>omsingeld door</i>	surrounded by
<i>onderhevig aan</i>	liable, subject to
* <i>ongerust over</i>	anxious, worried about
<i>onverschillig voor</i>	indifferent to, regardless of
<i>onzichtbaar voor</i>	invisible to
* <i>opgewonden over</i>	excited about
<i>rechts van</i>	to the right of
<i>rijk aan</i>	rich in
<i>schadelijk voor</i>	harmful to
<i>schuldig aan</i>	guilty of

<i>slecht in</i>	bad at
* <i>teleurgesteld in</i>	disappointed in, with s.o.
* <i>teleurgesteld over</i>	disappointed in, with
<i>ten noorden van</i>	to the north of ²
<i>ten oosten van</i>	to the east of ²
<i>ten westen van</i>	to the west of ²
<i>ten zuiden van</i>	to the south of ²
<i>tevreden met, over</i>	pleased, satisfied with
<i>toegankelijk voor</i>	accessible to
<i>trots op</i>	proud of
<i>trouw aan</i>	faithful to
<i>typisch voor, typerend voor</i>	typical of
<i>verantwoordelijk voor</i>	responsible for
* <i>verbaasd over</i>	amazed at
* <i>verbannen uit</i>	banished from
* <i>vergeleken bij, met</i>	compared to, with
* <i>verliefd op</i>	in love with
* <i>verrast door</i>	surprised by
<i>verschillend van</i>	different from, to
* <i>verslaafd aan</i>	addicted to
* <i>vervangen door</i>	replaced by
* <i>verwonderd over</i>	amazed at
<i>vol</i>	full of ³
<i>vriendelijk tegen</i>	friendly to
<i>woedend op</i>	furious with
<i>zwak in</i>	weak at

1 *Jaloers* is ambiguous; if one specifically wants to express envy, the verb *benijden* must be used, eg. *Ik benijd hem* — I envy him, I am envious of him.

2 It is also possible to use *benoorden*, *beoosten* etc. as prepositions in themselves, eg. *benoorden de grote rivieren* = *ten noorden van de grote rivieren*. They are usually found only in the written language.

3 Dutch *vol* does not require any preposition, eg. *de emmer was vol water* — the bucket was full of water.

9.6 Adjectives used as nouns

9.6.1 Very often in English we use constructions such as 'large boats and little ones'. The 'ones' cannot be translated into Dutch and is rendered by the adjective, eg. *grote boten en kleine*. Whether the adjective is inflected or not in Dutch depends on whether it would be if the noun that is understood followed, eg. *een groot huis en een klein (huis)*.

9.6.2 *De rijke, de blinde* etc. can stand alone for *de rijke man, de blinde man*. Similarly in the plural *de rijken, de blinden* mean the rich and the blind.

9.6.3 *Het goede* – good, *het kwade* – evil, *het mooie* – the nice thing, *het stomme* – the stupid thing.

The inflected adjective preceded by the neuter definite article renders an abstract noun, eg.

Het leuke is dat ze een studiebeurs gekregen heeft.

The nice thing is she got a scholarship.

Het mooie van schaatsen is dat iedereen het doen kan.

The nice thing about skating is that everyone can do it.

9.6.4 Colours are *het groen, het geel* etc., eg.

Het groen van jouw trui bevalt me niet.

The green of your jumper doesn't appeal to me.

9.6.5 Note that adjectives of nationality are used in almost all cases to form the name of the feminine inhabitant, eg. *Chinees* = Chinese, *de Chinese* = the Chinese woman (see p. 248-254).

9.7 Formation of Adjectives

9.7.1 SUFFIXES

It should be noted that the endings *-aardig, -(kund)ig, -matig, -talig, -waardig* and *-zijdig* take the stress, eg. *plantaardig, veelzijdig*.

Note: Sometimes the same word can take a number of the endings given below, each new combination giving a new word, eg. *kinderachtig* – childish, puerile; *kinds* – senile, second childhood; *kinderlijk* – child-like.

-(e)loos is equivalent in every way to English -less, eg.
doelloos – aimless, *ouderloos* – parentless, *hopeloos* – hopeless.

Note: *Werkloos* (unemployed) is often pronounced *werkeloos* and sometimes written as such. The inclusion of *-e-* is simply a matter of sound.

-end(e) actually the addition of *-d(e)* to the infinitive to form a present participle that can act as an adjective, eg. *werkend* – working, *de arbeidende klasse* – the working class.

-achtig a very common and useful ending and one that is still productive. It often renders English -like, eg. *katachtig* – cat-like, *doosachtig* – box-like. The possibilities are infinite, eg. *dat kind doet zo grote-mensenachtig, oude-vrijsterachtig* – old-maidish. It can also be suffixed to colours to render -ish, eg. *groenachtig* – greenish. The literal meaning is, however, often no longer evident, eg. *twijfelachtig* – doubtful, *regenachtig* – rainy. In many cases the stress has even shifted to the ending, eg. *reusàchtig* – gigantic, *woonàchtig* – resident, *waaràchtig* – true(ly).

-baar a common ending added to the stems of verbs often corresponding to English -able, eg. *draagbaar* – portable, *onuitstaanbaar* – unbearable, *leesbaar* – readable, *dankbaar* – grateful, *zichtbaar* – visible.

-en this ending is suffixed to nouns denoting materials (see p. 81), eg. *houten* – wooden, *gouden* – golden, *kartonnen* – cardboard, *betonnen* – cement, *papieren* – paper, *stenen* – stone, *gipsen* – plaster.

-rijk 'rich in', 'endowed with', eg. *fantasierijk* – imaginative, *belangrijk* – important, *schaduwrijk* – very shady, *glorierijk* – glorious.

-talig a handy ending for rendering -speaking, eg. *Engelstalig* – English-speaking, *Nederlandstaligen* – Dutch speaking people.

-ig a common ending often suffixed to nouns meaning 'having, characterized by', eg. *machtig* – mighty, *ijverig* – industrious, *buiig* – showery, *levendig* – lively. It is also used colloquially just like English -ish for approximation, eg. *groenig* – greenish, *viezig* – dirtyish, *nattig* – wet-tish.

This ending is also commonly applied to school and university subjects ending in *-kunde* to form adjectives, eg. *taalkundig* – linguistic, *letterkundig* – literary, *plantkundig* – botanical. From those adjectives are then formed the names of the people who practise the respective science, eg. *taalkundige* – linguist, *verloskundige* – obstetrician.

-erig not an over-common ending which often has a pejorative meaning, eg. *petieterig* – tiny, *slaperig* – sleepy, *winderig* – windy, *zanderig* – sandy, *kitscherig* – kitschy, *hebberig* – greedy, *puisterig* – pimply, *paniekerig* – panicky.

- isch* (sometimes spelt *-ies*) is chiefly found in foreign, often scientific words and is equivalent to English *-ic*, *-ical*, eg. *historisch*, *socialistisch*, *logisch*.
- s* (formerly *-sch* and still found in pre-war books as such)
 1 common ending for nationalities, eg. *Nederlands*, *Zweeds*, *Engels*, *Frans*.
 2 for adjectives from place-names, eg. *Amsterdams*, *Leids*, *Londens*, *Gouds*, *Gronings*.
 3 it is sometimes added to words other than proper nouns, eg. *kerks* – churchy, *hemels* – heavenly, *duivels* – devilish, *aards* – earthly, *kinds* – senile, *schools* – pedantic, *speels* – playful.
 It is this ending which one employs in the very commonly used expressions *op z'n* adjective + *s* which are similar in meaning to the French 'à la + adjective', eg. *op z'n Frans* – à la française (i.e. as the French do, in the French way).
 One can often invent such adjectives forming them from the names of people one knows, eg. *op z'n Wims* – as Wim would do it (i.e. sloppily, well etc.)
- (e)lijk* a very common suffix which has no adverbial qualities despite its historical connections with English *-ly* (compare lovely, homely). The 'e' is usually included but not always, eg. *vriendelijk* – friendly, *maatschappelijk* – social, *menselijk* – human(e), *ongelofelijk*⁵ – unbelievable, *vreeslijk* or *vreselijk*⁵ – terrible (usually the latter), *gevaarlijk* – dangerous, *persoonlijk* – personal.
- zaam* difficult to isolate a meaning for this ending. It is relatively common, eg. *langzaam* – slow, *buigzaam* – flexible, *gehoorzaam* – obedient.
- vol* similar to English *-ful*, eg. *succesvol* – successful, *talentvol* – talented, *waardevol* – valuable.
- vormig* corresponds to English *-shaped* and is still a very productive ending, eg. *trechtersvormig* – funnel-shaped, *bolvormig* – spherical-shaped, *tegelvormig* – tile-shaped.
- waardig* equivalent to English *-worthy*, eg. *bezienswaardig* – worth seeing, *bewonderenswaardig* – praiseworthy, *betreurenswaardig* – lamentable, *zeewaardig* – sea-worthy, *merkwaardig* – remarkable.

-aardig not a very common ending and no longer productive, eg. *plantaardig* – vegetative, *kwaadaardig* – malignant, *goedaardig* – benign.

-matig this ending denotes a conformity to what is expressed in the noun it is suffixed to. It is quite a common ending, eg. *regelmatig* – regular, *kunstmatig* – artificial, *instinctmatig* – instinctively.

-vrij this corresponds to the English endings *-free* and *-less* and is still very productive, eg. *boomvrij* – treeless, *autovrij* – free of cars.

9.7.2 PREFIXES

on- is the most common means of negating adjectives and is used in a similar way to English *un-*, eg. *onvriendelijk* – unfriendly, *ondankbaar* – ungrateful. *On* is always unstressed.

There are a few compounds with *on-* whose principal component no longer exists, eg. *onnozel* – silly, *ondeugend* – naughty.

in- Some foreign words, as in English, are negated by the addition of *in-* (*im-*), eg. *inkonsekwent* – inconsistent, *inefficiënt* – inefficient, *immo-reel* – immoral, *intolerant* – intolerant.

Dutch knows a number of adjectival intensifiers which are very commonly used:

aarts- *aartsdom* – really stupid,
aartslui – very lazy.

dood- (very common) *doodarm* – very poor, *doodgewoon* – quite ordinary, *doodeenvoudig* – simple, *doodstil* – very quiet, *doodmoe* – very tired,

Note: *doodsbang* – very afraid, *doodsbleek* – very pale.

hartstikke- (rather colloquial but very common and still productive), *hartstikke-leuk* – very nice, *hartstikke duur* – very expensive, *hartstikke stom* – very stupid.

hyper- (usually with foreign words), *hyperintelligent*, *hypernerveus*, *hypermodern*.

oer- *oerdom* – very stupid, *oeroud* – very old, *oerlelijk* – very ugly, *oer-saai* – terribly boring.

poep(ie)- (vulgar, more so is *stront-*), *poepduur* – very dear, *poepdeftig* – very pushy; *stronteigenwijs* – as stubborn as a mule.

⁵ Notice that the final consonant of what was the verbal stem remains unvoiced.

<i>reuze-</i>	(still productive), <i>reuzeleuk</i> – really nice, <i>reuzepopulair</i> – very popular, <i>reuzevervelend</i> – very annoying.
<i>stapel-</i>	(only used in combination with words for mad), <i>stapelgek</i> , <i>stapel-idioot</i> .
<i>super-</i>	<i>superfijn</i> – very fine, <i>superknap</i> – very clever, <i>superveilig</i> – very safe.
<i>ultra-</i>	(usually with foreign words), <i>ultraradicaal</i> , <i>ultraconservatief</i> .

In addition, the prefix *over-* has the same force as in English, eg. *overrijp* – over-ripe, *overgevoelig* – over-sensitive, *overgaar* – over-cooked.

The intensifiers given above are particularly common and are to a degree still productive. In addition to them are others, many of them nouns, which occur in only one compound adjective; sometimes these are translated almost literally, eg. *ijskoud* – ice-cold, *spotgoedkoop* – dirt-cheap, but very often in English they are rendered by an 'as - as -' phrase, eg. *stokdoof* – as deaf as a post. Beware when confronted with an English 'as - as -' expression because more often than not it will be a compound adjective in Dutch although *zo - als -* expressions do exist too, eg. *zo mager als een lat* – as thin as a rake; *zo blind als een mol* – as blind as a bat; *zo trots als een pauw* – as proud as a peacock.

The following list is by no means complete.

<i>apetrots</i>	as proud as a peacock
<i>broodnuchter</i>	as sober as a judge
<i>drijfnat</i>	wet through
<i>glashelder</i>	as clear as a bell
<i>haarfijn</i>	as fine as hair
<i>hemelsbreed</i>	very wide
<i>hondsbrutaal</i>	very cheeky, bold
<i>ijskoud</i>	ice-cold
<i>keihard</i> ⁶	as hard as stone
<i>kerngezond</i>	as fit as a fiddle
<i>kersvers</i>	very fresh, new; hot from the press
<i>kurkdroog</i>	as dry as a bone
<i>loeiheet</i>	as hot as hell
<i>loodrecht</i>	perpendicular, vertical
<i>morsdood</i>	as dead as a doornail
<i>peperduur</i>	very expensive
<i>piekfijn</i>	very spruce, smart

⁶ *keihard* like the adjective *hard* can mean hard, fast or loud and can thus be translated in various ways

<i>piemelnaakt</i>	as naked as the day one was born
<i>pikdonker</i>	pitch-dark
<i>poedelnaakt</i>	as naked as the day one was born
<i>roodgloeiend</i>	red-hot
<i>rotsvast</i>	as firm as a rock
<i>schatrijk</i>	very wealthy
<i>smoorverliefd</i>	head-over-heels in love
<i>snikheet</i>	as hot as hell
<i>spiegelglad</i>	as smooth as silk
<i>spotgoedkoop</i>	as cheap as dirt
<i>springlevend</i>	alive and kicking
<i>stampvol</i>	chock-full
<i>stikkeet</i>	as hot as hell
<i>steenkoud</i>	stone-cold
<i>stokdoof</i>	as deaf as a post
<i>stokoud</i>	as old as the hills
<i>stomdronken</i>	dead-drunk
<i>straatarm</i>	as poor as a church-mouse
<i>tjokvol</i>	chock-full
<i>wagenwijd (open)</i>	wide open
<i>wildvreemd</i>	completely strange

9.7.3 COLOURS

<i>beige</i>	– beige	<i>lila</i>	– lilac
<i>blauw</i>	– blue	<i>oranje</i>	– orange
<i>bruin</i>	– brown	<i>purper</i>	– purple
<i>geel</i>	– yellow	<i>paars</i>	– purple
<i>grijs</i>	– grey	<i>rood</i>	– red
<i>groen</i>	– green	<i>rose</i>	– pink
		<i>wit</i>	– white
		<i>zwart</i>	– black

-kleurig is often used to form new colours from nouns, especially from metals, eg. *goudkleurig* – gold, *zilverkleurig* – silver.

licht- and *donker-* prefixed to any colour render light and dark, eg. *lichtgroen*, *donker-rood*. Note: *lichtpaars* – mauve.

-ig and *-achtig* (particularly the latter can be suffixed to the colours to render -ish, eg. *groenachtig* – greenish.

All colours can be compounded with each other to render shades, eg. *grijsgroen* – greyish green, *geelbruin* – yellowish brown. Note: *zwartwit* – black and white⁷, eg. *een zwartwit televisietoestel* – a black and white television set.

Sometimes nouns are prefixed to the colours as can be done in English, eg. *smaragd-groen* – emerald green, *kastanjebruin* – chestnut brown, *scharlakenrood* – scarlet, *okergeel* – ochre, *pikzwart* – black as pitch, *roetzwart* – as black as soot, *bloed-rood* – blood red, *hemelsblauw* – sky blue, *grasgroen* – as green as grass, *spierwit* – as white as a sheet.

Note: *Wat voor kleur is het?* – What colour is it?

9.8 Notes on some peculiarities of adjectives

9.8.1 the adjective *wijlen* = late (as of deceased persons) precedes the title as in English, eg. *wijlen Prof. T.H. Elsschot*, *wijlen Koning Karels zoon* = the late King Charles' son. Note: no definite article is required in Dutch in such expressions.

9.8.2 there are a number of standard expressions in which the adjective follows the noun. English knows such cases too, eg. *moederlief*, *vaderlief*, *meisjelief* – mother dear etc., *God almachtig* – God almighty, *gouverneur-generaal* – governor-general, *Staten-Generaal* – States-General, *moeder-overste* – mother-superior.

9.8.3 some adjectives are now joined to the noun and are seen as forming a new concept, eg. *platteland* – country, *jongeman* – young man, *jongelui* – young people, youth, *hogeschool* – tertiary school, *hoogleraar* – professor, *vrijgezel* – bachelor. The shifted stress in such cases illustrates the degree to which such words are considered compound nouns. There are, however, some which retain the stress on the adjective, eg. *zuurkool* – sauerkraut, *rodekool* – red-cabbage. There does not seem to be any rule for inflection in such compounds; they must simply be learnt as they are met. Often one sees *halfdrie* etc. (i.e. time) written as one word as well as *een halfpond*, *halfkilo*.

9.8.4 adjectives of nationality are always written with capitals although some modern writers ignore this. Note that although geographical regions are written as hyphenated nouns, the adjectives derived from them are not, eg. *West-Duitsland* – *Westduits*, *Midden-Europa* – *Middeneuropees*. Only those prefixes which are in themselves adjectives are hyphenated, eg. *Zeeuws-Vlaanderen* – *Zeeuws-Vlaams*, *Kaaps-Hollands*, *Brits-Amerikaans*.

Also many learned compounds made of two adjectives, eg. *literair-critisch*.

9.8.5 the adjectives *eerstejaars*, *eersterangs*, *tweedehands* and *volbloed* are prefixed to the noun without inflecting, eg. *een tweedehandspiano*, *een eerstejaarsstudent*. The adjective *rot* (awful, horrible etc.), which is rather colloquial but very common nowadays, is also prefixed to the noun, eg. *een rothuis* – a horrible house, *een rottag* – a ghastly day; there is, however, a predicative adjective with similar meaning, i.e. *rottig*.

9.8.6 *de* and *het* are prefixed to *-zelfde*, eg. *dezelfde man* – the same man, *dat is mij allemaal hetzelfde* – that is all the same to me.

9.8.7 on occasions when using more than one adjective before a noun in English we join the two by 'and' – this is never done in Dutch, eg. beautiful (and) unusual things – *prachtige, buitengewone dingen*.

9.8.8 the adjectives *heel*, *geheel* and *gans* – all of which mean 'whole' – although the last two are somewhat literary – can precede the definite article, eg. *heel de wereld* – the whole world, *gans het volk* (lit.) – the entire nation.

⁷ *het zwart op wit hebben* – to have it (put) down in black and white.

10 Adverbs (*bijwoorden*)

The difficulty associated with systematically describing and classifying adverbs is embodied in the Dutch word *bijwoord*, i.e. a word that is there, put in, tacked on. More specifically they are those words which describe when, where, why and how. They can be individual words or complete phrases. The approach adopted here is to look at the simplest adverbs, i.e. those derived from adjectives, and to list the most common adverbs of time and place (see TMP rule p. 95) as well as interrogative adverbs and finally to look briefly at the formation of adverbs. Adverbs from adjectives plus the diminutive ending *-(t)jes* are dealt with on p. 110.

The adverb and adjective are identical in Dutch, i.e. Dutch does not know any equivalent of the English *-ly* ending. (Exception: *gewoon* – usual; *gewoonlijk* – usually), eg. He is quick; he runs quickly – *Hij is snel; hij rent snel*. This rule is easily forgotten when the adverb precedes an inflected adjective,

an awfully nice bag – *een ontzettend leuke tas*
a terribly old man – *een verschrikkelijk oude man*

Compare:

a terrible old man – *een verschrikkelijke oude man*

Also in:

that is a typically Dutch hat – *dat is een typisch Nederlandse hoed*

10.1 Comparative and superlative of adverbs

As there is no distinction made between the adjective and the adverb in Dutch the rules for forming the comparative and superlative grades are basically as for adjectives, i.e. by the addition of *-er* and *-st* (see p. 77, 79).

The predicative superlative is preceded by the article *het* and may end in either *-st* or *-ste*, but the forms without *-e* are more common, eg. *het mooist(e)*, *het grootst(e)*.

This use of *het* has a parallel in English:

When are the flowers (the) prettiest? – *Wanneer zijn de bloemen het mooist?*
Who sang (the) longest? – *Wie heeft het langst gezongen?*

At times it is difficult to decide whether it is the superlative of the adjective or the adverb that is required; in such cases usually both are correct but the use of the article varies (if 'the' can be left out, it is the adverb one is dealing with).

Which woman is (the) prettiest? –
Welke vrouw is het mooist(e)? – adverb
Welke vrouw is de mooiste? – adjective

That road is (the) widest. –
Die weg is het breedst(e). – adverb
Die weg is de breedste. – adjective

This girl is (the) nicest. –
Dit meisje is het aardigste. – adverb and adjective

Irregular comparatives and superlatives:

<i>goed</i>	<i>beter</i>	<i>best</i>	– good, better, best
<i>graag</i> (see p. 149, 153)	<i>liever</i>	<i>liefst</i>	– willingly, more/most willingly (<i>gaarne</i> lit.)
<i>veel</i>	<i>meer</i>	<i>meest</i>	– much, more, most
<i>weinig</i>	<i>minder</i>	<i>minst</i>	– little, less, least

In addition one should note that although *dikwijls* and *vaak* (often) are interchangeable, only *vaak* has a comparative and a superlative form, i.e. *vaak* – *vaker* – *vaakst*. Also with *dichtbij* and *vlakbij* (nearby) only the former can be inflected, i.e. *dichterbij* (*het dichtste bij*, *het dichtstbij*) (see p. 80).

For the use of *meer/meest* to form the comparative and superlative grades of adjectives see p. 78, 79. The rules are the same for adverbs.

Zij is het meest geëmancipeerd van allemaal.
She is the most emancipated of all.

10.1.1 NOTES ON THE SUPERLATIVE OF ADVERBS

1 There is a difference in meaning between 'the most important meeting' and 'a most important meeting'; the former is the superlative of the adjective 'important' and is rendered in Dutch as *de belangrijkste vergadering*, whereas the latter is a superlative adverb qualifying the adjective 'important' and is rendered *een hoogst belangrijke vergadering*.

2 *Minder/minst* are commonly used before adjectives in this way too.

Dit is een minder interessant boek dan dat.
This is a less interesting book than that.

Maar dit boek is het minst interessante.
But this book is the least interesting.

3 at least — *minstens, tenminste, op z'n minst*
not in the least — *niet in het minst*

4 A common alternative to the superlative formed from *het + st* is that formed from *op z'n/hun mooiste*

De bloemen zijn in de maand mei op hun mooiste.
Op z'n best — at best; *Op z'n vroegst* — at the earliest.

Also: *laatst, op het laatst* — at last, in the end.

5 In the written language the following adverbial superlatives occur which are not translatable as such into English:

Ik zou dat ten zeerste betreuen.
I would regret that very much.
Dat is ten strengste verboden.
That is strictly forbidden.
Het moet ten spoedigste worden afgeleverd.
It must be delivered immediately.
Hij heeft het ten stelligste ontkend.
He flatly denied it.

10.2 Intensifying adverbs

Used to emphasize other adverbs and adjectives (see p. 80).

10.2.1 VERY: *HEEL, ERG, ZEER* (LIT.)

The three are completely synonymous but *zeer* is rather formal or particularly emphatic. *Heel* can also mean 'whole' and *erg* can mean 'terrible', eg. *Het was heel erg.* — It was quite awful.

Occasionally one gets a doubling up of *heel* and *erg* as adverbs, eg. *Het is heel erg moeilijk.* — It is very very difficult.

It is also common for the adverbs *erg* and particularly *heel* to inflect when preceding an inflected attributive adjective, but this should be avoided in writing, eg. *een hele mooie boom* — *een heel mooie boom.*

10.2.2	<i>akelig</i>	awful(ly)
	<i>ontzettend</i>	awful(ly)
	<i>vreselijk</i>	terrible (-y)
	<i>verschrikkelijk</i>	frightful(ly)
	<i>ontzaglijk</i>	awful(ly)
	<i>ontiegelijk</i>	extremely
	<i>afschuwelijk</i>	horrible (-y) — only followed by pejorative adjectives/adverbs.

These adverbs, particularly the first three, are very commonly used in the spoken language (but may be written also) to intensify adjectives and other adverbs. They must never be inflected when occurring before attributive adjectives,

<i>een ontzettend leuke jurk</i>	an awfully nice dress
<i>een verschrikkelijk lief kind</i>	a terribly nice child
<i>een afschuwelijk lelijk gezicht</i>	a horribly ugly face

Ontiegelijk is rather a modern word and is increasing in popularity.

Similarly the word *enorm* is very in at the moment. (see also *reuze*, p. 88)

<i>een enorm duur gebouw</i>	a tremendously expensive building
<i>ik heb enorm veel verkocht</i>	I sold an enormous amount

10.2.3

especially	<i>bijzonder</i> (pronounced and often written <i>biezonder/bizonder</i>)
exceptional(ly)	<i>buitengewoon</i>
too	<i>te</i>
much too	<i>veel te</i> (colloquially <i>veels te</i>)

One should take care with English 'especially': when it is used as an adjectival or adverbial intensifier in the above sense *bijzonder* is the appropriate word.

It was not especially (particularly) interesting.

Het was niet bijzonder interessant.

Not, however, in 'especially when it rains' or 'especially in summer' etc. when *vooral* is required, eg. *vooral wanneer het regent, vooral 's zomers.*

10.3 Adverbs of time

10.3.1 It is good style in Dutch to begin clauses with adverbs of time. It is particularly advisable to do this when there are also adverbs of manner and place in the same clause. Dutch insists on the order Time, Manner, Place whereas English usually has the reverse order.

He goes to school by bus every day.

P M T

Hij gaat iedere dag met de bus naar school.

T M P

By beginning clauses with time in Dutch, one then needs only concentrate on putting manner and place in the correct order.

Iedere dag gaat hij met de bus naar school.

Notice that if one begins the clause with time, inversion of subject and verb takes place.

Only statements can begin with time, never questions where the verb must be first.

Kom je morgen met de fiets of de tram?

The only exceptions to time always preceding manner and place are the short commonly occurring adverbs, *er*, *hier* and *daar*. *Er* (unemphatic 'there') always precedes time and *hier* and *daar* can stand at the beginning of the clause for emphasis and thus precede time; otherwise they follow time usually. (see p. 97)

Ik ben er al geweest. (only possible order)

Daar ben ik al geweest./Ik ben al daar geweest.

Hier heb ik vanochtend brood gekocht./Ik heb vanochtend hier brood gekocht./Vanochtend heb ik hier brood gekocht.

10.3.2 When there are two expressions of time in a clause, the less definite always precedes the more definite.

I get up at 10.00 a.m. every Sunday.

Ik sta iedere zondag om tien uur op./Iedere zondag sta ik om tien uur op.

He always reads till midnight.

Hij leest altijd tot middernacht./Altijd leest hij tot middernacht.

10.3.3 Note that in the above English sentence the adverb of time occurs between the subject and the finite verb. This is very common in English but must not be copied in Dutch.

He seldom rings me up.

Hij belt me zelden op.

He never gave me the book.

Hij heeft me het boek nooit gegeven.

10.3.4 When an expression of time occurs in a sentence with a nominal direct object, it precedes the object, not however, when the object is a pronoun.

Jullie moeten vanavond dit hoofdstuk lezen.

You must read this chapter tonight.

but

Jullie moeten het vanavond lezen.

Ik heb hem gisteren het boek gegeven.

I gave him the book yesterday.

Note, however, that this problem can be avoided by beginning with time.

Vanavond moeten jullie dit hoofdstuk lezen.

Gisteren heb ik hem het boek gegeven.

The same commonly occurs with an expression of place.

Hij zat in de tuin een boek te lezen.

Zij zag overal vreemde dingen.

10.3.5 Do not let the **word order in co-ordinate clauses** containing an adverb of time confuse you.

Gisteren is hij naar Amsterdam gevlogen maar morgen komt hij terug.

Remember that the co-ordinating conjunctions *en*, *of*, *want* and *maar* do not affect the word order. Thus, in this example, *morgen* is taken as the first idea and consequently inversion of subject and verb takes place. A stylistic variant of the above is:

Hij is gisteren naar Amsterdam gevlogen maar (hij) komt morgen terug.

10.3.6 There can be a slight difference in the **word order in subordinate clauses** too.

Zij ging vroeg naar bed, omdat ze die dag een lange wandeling had gemaakt.

The only possible place for the adverb is after the subject. This is not the case in English.

She went to bed early because that day she had gone for a long walk or because she had gone for a long walk that day.

10.3.7 Note the presence or absence of 'for' in expressions of time.

a *Voor hoe lang ga je? Ik ga er (voor) twee weken naar toe.*

How long are you going for? I'm going there for two weeks.

b *Ik ben er twee weken geweest./Ik was er twee weken.*

I was there for two weeks.

c *Ik woon hier al twee weken.*

I have been living here for two weeks.

a *voor* (when in the future, but can also be omitted in such cases)

b *nothing* (when in the past)

c *al* (when in the past in English but lasting up till the present with the verb in the present in Dutch, see p. 121, 122)

Note the word order with *al twee weken* constructions:

Ik woon er/hier/daar al twee weken.

but

Ik woon al twee weken in Amsterdam.

Ik wacht al twee uur op je.

Days of the week

on Sundays	's <i>zondags</i> (or <i>op zondagen etc.</i>)
on Mondays	's <i>maandags</i>
on Tuesdays	<i>dinsdags</i>
on Wednesdays	's <i>woensdags</i>
on Thursdays	<i>donderdags</i>
on Fridays	<i>vrijdags</i>
on Saturdays	<i>zaterdags</i>
on Sunday etc. (past and coming)	(<i>op</i>) <i>zondag</i>
the Sunday after etc.	<i>de zondag daarna etc.</i>
Sunday morning, afternoon, evening/night	<i>zondagochtend, -morgen, -middag, -avond</i>
on Sunday evenings etc.	<i>op zondagavond etc.</i>
by Sunday	<i>vóór zondag</i>
next Sunday etc.	<i>aanstaande/volgende/komende zondag etc.</i>
last Sunday etc.	<i>vorige/verleden/afgelopen zondag</i>
from Sunday (on) etc.	<i>vanaf zondag etc.</i>
on working days	<i>op werkdagen</i>
on holidays	<i>op feestdagen</i>

Yesterday, today, tomorrow etc.

yesterday	<i>gister(en)</i>
yesterday morning, afternoon etc.	<i>gisterochtend, -morgen, -middag</i>
yesterday evening or last night	Note: <i>gisteravond</i>
day before yesterday	<i>eergisteren</i>
morning of the day before yesterday etc.	<i>eergisterochtend, -middag etc.</i>
today	<i>vandaag</i>
today	<i>heden</i> (lit.)
from today on	<i>vanaf vandaag</i>
this morning, afternoon etc.	<i>vanochtend, -morgen, -middag, -avond</i>
tonight (after midnight),	Note: <i>vannacht</i>
last night (after midnight)	

tomorrow
tomorrow morning
tomorrow afternoon, evening/night
day after tomorrow

morgen
morgenochtend (not *morgenmorgen*)
morgenmiddag, -avond
overmorgen

Periods of the day

in the morning(s)
in the morning(s)
in the afternoon(s)
in the evening(s)
at night

during the day
late in the evening
early in the morning
at lunch-time
at one o'clock in the morning

's *morgens*
's *ochtends*
's *middags*
's *avonds*
's *nachts*

overdag
's *avonds laat*
's *ochtends vroeg*
tussen de middag
om een uur 's ochtends/in de ochtend

Weekend

this/next weekend
last weekend
at the weekend

dit/volgend/komend weekend
vorig/verleden/afgelopen weekend
in het weekend/weekeinde

Seasons

next summer, winter, autumn, spring

last summer etc.
this summer etc. (i.e. both past and coming)
in summer
in winter
in autumn
in spring

volgende/aanstaande/komende zomer, winter, herfst, lente
vorige/verleden/afgelopen zomer etc.
van de zomer etc.

's *zomers, in de zomer*
's *winters, in de winter*
in de herfst, in het najaar
in de lente, in het voorjaar

Now

now
now
from now on
until now, up to now

thans (lit.)
nu (colloquial *nou*)
van nu af aan, vanaf nu, voortaan
tot nu toe, tot nog toe, tot dusver,
tot op de dag van vandaag

nowadays
now and then
now and then, every so often

*vandaag de dag, tegenwoordig
(zo) nu en dan, af en toe
om de zoveel tijd*

Hour

for hours
hours ago
two hours ago
in two hours' time

*urenlang
uren geleden
but twee uur geleden
over twee uur*

Note: *uur* always in sing. after numerals

Day

one day, morning, evening etc.
that day, morning, evening etc.
the day after
the next day
the day before
all day, evening, night etc.
for days
days ago
one of these days
(on) the same day
once/twice a day
daily
the day after (that)

*op een dag, morgen, avond etc.
die dag, morgen, avond etc.
de dag daarna
de dag daarop
de dag daarvoor/tevore
de hele dag, avond, nacht etc.
dagenlang
dagen geleden
één dezer dagen
(op) dezelfde dag
één/twee keer per dag
dagelijks
de dag daarna/erna
daags nadien (lit.)
daags daarna (lit.)*

Week

this week
next week
last week
in a week, in a week's time
in a fortnight, in a fortnight's time
within a week
a week ago
a fortnight ago
Friday week, a week from Friday
during the week, on weekdays

*deze week, van de week
aanstaande/volgende/komende week
vorige/verleden/afgelopen week
over een week
over twee weken, over veertien dagen
binnen een week
een week geleden
twee weken geleden
vrijdag over een week
door de week, op werkdagen*

the week after
all week (long)
from next week on
once a week
twice a week etc.
every other/second week

*de week daarop
de hele week (door)
vanaf volgende week
één keer in de week/per week
twee keer in de week/per week etc.
om de andere week*

Month

this month
next month
last month
from next month (on)
in a month's time
within a month
a month ago
for months
once a month
the month after
at the beginning of January
in the middle of January

*deze maand, van de maand
volgende/aanstaande/komende maand
vorige/verleden/afgelopen maand
vanaf volgende maand
over een maand
binnen een maand
een maand geleden
maandenlang, maanden achtereen (formal)
één keer in de maand/per maand
de maand daarop
begin januari
midden januari
half januari
medio januari
eind januari
in juni*

at the end of January
in June

Year

this year
from this year (on)
next year
last year
in two years' time
two years ago
years ago

*dit jaar
vanaf dit jaar
volgend/komend jaar
vorig/verleden/afgelopen jaar
over twee jaar
twee jaar geleden
jaren geleden
jaren her (lit.)
de afgelopen drie jaar
het hele jaar door
het jaar daarop
één keer per/in het jaar*

the last three years
all year long/through
the year after
once a year

Note: *jaar* always in singular after numerals.

Holidays

on public holidays
at Christmas time
at Easter
at Whitsuntide

op feestdagen
met Kerst
met Pasen
met Pinksteren

GENERAL

always
still

not yet
still not
for good

for ever (and ever)
seldom
ever
never

mostly
sometimes
now and again
meanwhile

often

more often
usually
usually, generally
recently

lately

at the latest
at the latest, not later than
at the earliest
late

altijd
steeds
nog
nog altijd
nog steeds
nog niet
nog steeds niet
voor altijd
voor goed
voor eeuwig (en altijd)
zelden
ooit
nooit
nimmer
meestal
soms
af en toe
intussen
in de tussentijd
ondertussen
inmiddels
vaak
dikwijls
vaker (see p. 93)
gewoonlijk
doorgaans
onlangs
kort geleden
laatst
de laatste tijd
op z'n laatst
uiterlijk
op z'n vroegst
te laat

in the future
henceforth
in the course of time

in due course
high time

for the time being, provisionally
temporarily
since, since then

of old
from way back
from a child
from childhood

in de toekomst
vervolgens
in het vervolg
op den duur
na verloop van tijd
mettertijd
te zijner tijd
hoog tijd
de hoogste tijd
voorlopig
tijdelijk
sindsdien
sedertdien (lit.)
vanouds (her)

van kindsbeen af

ADVERBS OF TIME WITH ALTERNATIVE TRANSLATIONS IN DUTCH

Afterwards

afterwards, after
afterwards, after that
afterwards, later
shortly afterwards

toen, daarna, naderhand
nadien (lit.)
later
kort daarna

Again

again
(yet) again
(once) again
again and again

weer
alweer
opnieuw
steeds weer
telkens (weer)

Already

already
already

al
(al)reeds (lit.)

Before

before, earlier, formerly, previously
(never) before
before that
as never before

vroeger
(nooit) eerder
voordien (lit.)
als nooit tevoren

Finally

finally
finally, at last, eventually
finally, at the end

*tenslotte*¹
eindelijk
op 't laatst
ten laatste (following *ten eerste*,
ten tweede etc.)

Firstly

firstly
for the first time
firstly (followed by secondly,
thirdly etc.)
first (as in 'show me the letter first',
i.e. before you send it)
at first

eerst
voor 't eerst
ten eerste

van tevoren

in het begin

Immediately

immediately

onmiddellijk
meteen

In a moment

as in 'I'll do it in a moment'

zo meteen
straks
dadelijk
zo
direkt

Just

just

net
*pas*²
zojuist

1 *tenslotte* also means 'after all'

2 *pas* also means 'only' and 'not until'; *juist* does not usually mean 'just', only *zojuist* does

Soon

soon
soon, quickly
soon afterwards
soon, shortly
sooner
sooner or later

gauw
spoedig
kort daarna
binnenkort
vroeger
vroeger of later, vroeg of laat

Note: I'll do it soon (see 'in a moment').

Then

then
then (past tense)
then, at that time

dan
toen
destijds
toentertijd
indertijd

Note: *Dan* can occur in sentences in both the past and present tenses.

Ze waren van plan geweest om elkaar in de stad te ontmoeten. Ze wilden dan...
Here the verb is in the past but the action is not. It did not occur.

Compare:

Ze hebben elkaar in de stad ontmoet. Toen gingen ze...

Toen means one occasion. The word *altijd* (repeated occasions) necessitates the use of *dan* in the following sentence, even if the verb is in the past.

Ik keek altijd eerst naar het nieuws en dan las ik de krant.

Compare the use of *wanneer* when the verb is in the past. (see p. 195)

Time

at the same time

tegelijk
tegelijkertijd
terzelfdertijd

at the same time, as well as
some time ago
a little while

tevens
een tijd(je) geleden
een tijdje, poosje
eventjes

all the time
for a long time
(exactly) on time

de hele tijd
(al) lang
(stipt) op tijd
bijtijds

once, one time

een keer, eenmaal

twice, two times
a few times

tweemaal
een paar keer
enige malen (formal)
de vorige keer
de volgende keer
deze dit keer
twee keer per/op een dag

last time
next time
this time
two times (twice) a day

Note: the double gender of *keer* in the above expressions (see p. 32); *keer* is always used in the singular after numerals.

in the course of time

in de loop der tijd
op den duur
na verloop van tijd

10.4 Adverbs of place and direction

It will be noticed that in many of the groups set out below there is a form with and without the preposition *naar*. In English there is usually one word to express both place and motion towards a place; in the latter case Dutch must express the motion with *naar* after verbs of motion.

When is he coming here?
She went outside.
They went upstairs.

Wanneer komt hij hiernaartoe?
Zij ging naar buiten.
Zij gingen naar boven.

hier
daar
er

here
there
there (*er* is an unemphatic form of *daar*, see p. 237)

hiervandaan, van hier
daar-, ervandaan, van daar
hiernaartoe
daar-, ernaartoe

from here
from there
(to) here
(to) there

hiernaast
hierop
hierin
hierachter

next door
on this/these
in this/these
behind this/these etc.

Similarly

daarop
daarin
daarachter
erop
erin
erachter

on that/those
in that/those
behind that/those etc.
on it/them
in it/them
behind it/them (see p. 236)

hier en daar, her en der

here and there

links
rechts
linksaf
rechtsaf
naar links
naar rechts
die/deze kant op/uit

on the left
on the right
(turn) left
(turn) right
to the left
to the right
that way, this way

in het midden
rechtdoor
verderop
naar voren (toe)
naar achteren (toe)
voorin
voorop
vooraan
achterin
achterop
achteraan
(see p. 221)

in the middle
straight ahead
further on
forward, ahead
back(wards)
in the front
up (on) the front
at the head
in the back
on the back
at the end

boven
beneden
naar boven, de trap op
naar beneden, de trap af

upstairs
downstairs
(to) upstairs
(to) downstairs

bovenop, bovenaan
onderin

at the top (of)
at the bottom (of)

binnen, binnenshuis
buiten, buitenshuis
naar binnen

inside
outside
(to) inside

<i>naar buiten</i>	(to) outside
<i>naar huis</i> <i>thuis</i>	home at home
Exception	
<i>thuiskomen</i>	to come home
<i>weg</i> <i>verweg</i> <i>onderweg</i>	away far away underway
<i>bergop(waarts)</i> <i>bergaf(waarts)</i> <i>stroomop(waarts)</i> <i>stroomaf(waarts)</i>	uphill downhill upstream downstream
<i>alhier</i> (lit.) <i>aldaar</i> (lit.) <i>te Uwent</i> (lit.)	here, at this place there, at the place mentioned at your place

10.4.1 INDEFINITE ADVERBS OF PLACE

<i>overal</i> <i>ergens</i>	everywhere somewhere (also an adverb of manner meaning 'somehow')
<i>nergens</i> <i>ergens anders, elders</i> <i>nergens anders</i> <i>overal vandaan</i> <i>overal naartoe/heen</i> <i>ergens vandaan</i> <i>ergens naartoe/heen</i> <i>nergens vandaan</i> <i>nergens naartoe/heen</i>	nowhere somewhere else nowhere else from everywhere (to) everywhere from somewhere (to) somewhere from nowhere (to) nowhere

10.4.2 ADVERBS OF MANNER AND DEGREE

Adverbs of manner and degree are too numerous and diverse to list. The student is advised to consult a dictionary in such cases.

10.5 Interrogative adverbs (*vragende bijwoorden*)

Interrogative adverbs are those particles that introduce questions, asking when, where, how and why etc. (see also Interrogative pronouns, p. 72). For interrogative adverbs in indirect questions see p. 203.

<i>waarom</i>	why
<i>wanneer</i>	when
<i>sinds wanneer</i>	since when
<i>hoe</i> <i>hoelang</i>	how how long
<i>waar</i> <i>waar... naartoe/heen</i> <i>waar... vandaan</i>	where where... to where... from

10.5.1 *Hoe* sometimes renders English 'what', eg. What is your name? – *Hoe is je naam? Hoe heet je?* Also the question 'what is the date?' is *de hoeveelste is het vandaag?* *Hoe* is often followed by other adverbs as in English.

hoe vaak – how often; *hoe veel* – how much/many

Note the interrogative clause *Hoe komt het dat je...?* 'How is it you...?'

10.5.2 Whenever *waar* occurs in a question with a verb of motion designating direction to or from a place, Dutch must use the compounds *waar...naartoe/heen* or *waar...vandaan*.

Waar woont u? but Waar gaat u naartoe?
Waar komt hij vandaan?

10.6 Adverbial conjunctions (*bijwoordelijke voegwoorden*)

See p. 199, 203.

10.7 Formation of adverbs

-s The addition of a final *-s* in various combinations is one of the main characteristics of adverbial formation:

<i>heelhuids</i>	unscathed, without a scratch
<i>(te)vergeefs</i>	in vain

The *op z'n* noun +*s* constructions are still productive.

<i>op z'n Hollands</i>	as the Dutch do, à la hollandaise
<i>op z'n Wims</i>	as Wim does
<i>op z'n janboerefluitjes</i>	higgledy-piggledy

-jes There is also a group of adverbial diminutives that are very commonly used in the spoken language. Some are permissible in the written language too (marked ⁺). This ending is still productive. (see p. 48)

<i>eventjes⁺</i>	just a moment
<i>frisjes⁺</i>	coolish ³
<i>gezelligjes</i>	cosy ³ , cosily
<i>kalmpjes (aan)⁺</i>	calmly
<i>knusjes⁺</i>	cosy ³ , snugly
<i>losjes⁺</i>	loosely
<i>netjes⁺</i>	nice ³ , nicely
<i>slapjes⁺</i>	weak ³ , gutless
<i>stiekempjes</i>	secretly
<i>stilletjes⁺</i>	quietly
<i>strakjes</i>	in a moment, soon
<i>zachtjes⁺</i>	quietly, gently

-gewijs (rather literary; basic meaning something like 'according to', 'by')

<i>groepsgewijs</i>	in groups
<i>steekproefsgewijs</i>	by taking random samples
<i>verhoudingsgewijs</i>	relatively, proportionately

-halve (more common in literature; basic meaning 'for the sake of')

<i>gemakshalve</i>	for convenience ('s sake)
<i>volledigheidshalve</i>	for the sake of completeness
<i>veiligheidshalve</i>	for safety's sake

³ It will be noticed that these words are occasionally used as predicative adjectives, eg. *Jij ziet er netjes uit.* – You look nice (i.e. nicely dressed).

-lijks No longer productive. Actually another adverbial *-s* suffixed to the adjectival ending *-lijk*. Found only in the words *dagelijks* (daily), *maandelijks* (monthly), *jaarlijks* (yearly). All these words are also used as adjectives: eg. *ons dagelijks brood* – our daily bread.

-lings No longer productive.

<i>blindelings</i>	blindly
<i>beurtelings</i>	in turns
<i>ijlings</i>	in haste
<i>schrijlings</i>	astride

-waarts Comparable to English *-ward(s)* and still productive.

<i>bergopwaarts</i>	uphill
<i>bergafwaarts</i>	downhill
<i>stroomopwaarts</i>	upstream
<i>stroomafwaarts</i>	downstream
<i>huiswaarts</i>	home, homeward
<i>stadwaarts</i>	towards the city

-weg This is quite a common ending for making adverbs of certain adjectives and is still productive to a degree, particularly in the spoken language.

<i>brutaalweg</i>	coolly, barefacedly
<i>domweg</i>	(quite) simply
<i>gewoonweg</i>	(quite) simply
<i>kortweg</i>	in short
<i>pakweg</i>	about, approximately, say

11 Verbs (*werkwoorden*)

Dutch verbs can be weak, strong, mixed or irregular; modal auxiliary verbs and *zijn* and *hebben* belong to separate categories.

Weak verbs are simply regular verbs, the term 'weak' having been invented by Jacob Grimm and being peculiar to Germanic languages. Weak verbs are those that form their past tenses by the addition of a dental suffix, as is the case in English: compare worked – *werkte, gewerkt*.

Strong verbs. Colloquially strong verbs are often referred to as irregular verbs, but strictly speaking there is a difference between strong and irregular verbs. Strong verbs are those belonging to the seven original ablaut series common to all Germanic languages, i.e. they follow one of seven basic patterns (see p. 116). Irregular verbs, on the other hand, are those that show irregularities that are at odds with the seven ablaut series (see p. 136). Elsewhere the term 'mixed verb' is used to describe those verbs which have a strong past participle and a weak imperfect (see p. 136). Strong verbs form their present tense exactly as weak verbs.

Only in the past tenses does it become obvious whether a verb is strong. All strong verbs have in common (a) a change in the vowel of the stem in the imperfect and/or the past participle and (c) all past participles end in *-en*.

Tense. The various tenses or 'times of action' of both weak and strong verbs will be looked at one by one in the following chapter. The complicated issue of tense is two-fold: firstly it entails the **formation** of the various tenses and secondly the **use** of those tenses. The two are dealt with separately here.

11.1 Formation of tenses

11.1.1 PRESENT TENSE (*de onvoltooid tegenwoordige tijd – o.t.t.*)

With the exception of *komen, zijn, hebben* and the modals, all verbs are regular in the present tense and the irregularities of strong verbs will only emerge in the past tenses.

Example: *werken* – to work

Singular:

- 1 *ik werk*
- 2 *jij werkt*
u werkt
- 3 *hij, zij, het werkt*

Plural:

- 1 *wij werken*
- 2 *jullie werken, werkt* (lit.)¹
u werkt
- 3 *zij werken*

The **interrogative** is formed simply by inverting the subject and the object, eg. *Ik werk* – I work, I am working, I do work; *werk ik?* – Am I working?, do I work? The *jij* form drops its *-t* when inversion occurs, eg. *jij werkt* but *werk jij?*

Note that the present progressive or continuous tense (i.e. I am running etc.) is not rendered in Dutch. (for exceptions see p. 165)

Rules for the formation of the present tense of all verbs (i.e. weak and strong)

The plural is always identical to the infinitive; the singular is formed by isolating the stem of the verb and then adding *-t* to the second and third persons; the first person singular and the stem are always identical. The rules that apply for the spelling of the stem are the same as for the plural of nouns and the inflection of adjectives, but are in reverse, i.e. the *-en* ending of the infinitive is dropped and the phonetics of Dutch cause certain consonants to be written singularly instead of double, certain vowels to be written double instead of singularly, and *v* and *z* to be written *f* and *s*.

Examples:

liggen – to lie

<i>ik lig</i>	<i>wij liggen</i>
<i>jij ligt</i>	<i>jullie liggen</i>
<i>hij ligt</i>	<i>zij liggen</i>

lopen – to walk

<i>ik loop</i>	<i>wij lopen</i>
<i>jij loopt</i>	<i>jullie lopen</i>
<i>hij loopt</i>	<i>zij lopen</i>

geloven – to believe

<i>ik geloof</i>	<i>wij geloven</i>
<i>jij gelooft</i>	<i>jullie geloven</i>
<i>hij gelooft</i>	<i>zij geloven</i>

reizen – to travel

<i>ik reis</i>	<i>wij reizen</i>
<i>jij reist</i>	<i>jullie reizen</i>
<i>hij reist</i>	<i>zij reizen</i>

¹ Nowadays the form in *-en* is usual. In Belgium *gij* (you), originally both a singular and a plural, is in general use and it takes the plural *-t* ending. This form is also found in older texts and particularly in the Bible. (see p. 53)

Sometimes, as with nouns and adjectives, a combination of these rules is applicable – see *geloven* above. If the stem already ends in *-t*, no further *t* is required, but if the stem ends in *-d* (pronounced *t*) then a *t* is added for the sake of form.

Examples:

bijten – to bite

ik bijt *wij bijten*
jij bijt *jullie bijten*
hij bijt *zij bijten*

rijden – to drive, ride

ik rijd *wij rijden*
jij rijdt *jullie rijden*
hij rijdt *zij rijden*

The interrogative of *jij bijt* is *bijt jij?*, whereas that of *jij rijdt* is *rijdt jij?*

Note: all verbs whose stem ends in *-d* and which have an *ij* or *ou* in the stem always drop the *d* in the first person singular and the interrogative of the second person singular; it may be written but is never pronounced, *ik rij(d)*, *hou(d)*; *rij(d) je*, *hou(d) je?*

There are five monosyllabic verbs that should be noted:

staan – to stand

ik sta
jij staat
(sta je?)
hij staat
 pl. *staan*

gaan – to go

ik ga
jij gaat
(ga je?)
hij gaat
 pl. *gaan*

slaan – to hit

ik sla
jij slaat
(sla je?)
hij slaat
 pl. *slaan*

zien – to see

ik zie
jij ziet
(zie je?)
hij ziet
 pl. *zien*

doen – to do

ik doe
jij doet
(doe je?)
hij doet
 pl. *doen*

The verb *komen* (to come) shows a slight irregularity in the present tense:

ik kom (not *koom*) *wij komen*
jij komt *jullie komen*
hij komt *zij komen*

11.1.2 IMPERFECT TENSE (*de onvoltooid verleden tijd – o.v.t.*)

The imperfect or simple past in English is I worked (a weak verb), I sang (a strong verb). The progressive and emphatic forms I was working, I did work are not translatable into Dutch (for exceptions see p. 165).

Weak verbs

The imperfect is formed, as in English, by the addition of a dental ending to the stem of the verb. The rules for the isolation of the stem are given above. The only difficulty with the formation of the imperfect of weak verbs in Dutch is deciding whether to add *-te/-ten* or *-de/-den* to the stem. The two possible conjugations are as follows:

werken – to work

ik werkte *wij werkten*
jij werkte *jullie werkten*
u werkte *u werkte*
hij, zij, het werkte *zij werkten*

horen – to hear

ik hoorde *wij hoorden*
jij hoorde *jullie hoorden*
u hoorde *u hoorde*
zij, zij, het hoorde *zij hoorden*

gij forms end in *-tet* and *-det*

Those stems that end in the voiceless consonants *p*, *t*, *k*, *f*, *s*, *ch* add the voiceless ending *-te/-ten*. The word *'t kofschip* can serve as a mnemonic. Stems ending in any other sound, including those ending in a vowel take *-de/-den*, eg. *bestellen* (to order) – *bestelde*, *bouwen* (to build) – *bouwde*, *gooien* (to throw) – *gooide* etc.

The endings *-te/-ten* and *-de/-den* are added to the stems of **all** weak verbs regardless of whether they already end in *t* or *d*, eg.:

praten (to talk) – *praatte*, *praatten*
branden (to burn) – *brandde*, *brandden*

Because of the tendency in ABN to drop final *n*'s in speech the following verbal forms are all pronounced identically: *praten*, *ik praatte*, *wij praatten*.

Sometimes the difference between present and past tense is not evident, eg. *zetten* (to put):

present tense: *ik zet, wij zetten*

past tense: *ik zette, wij zetten* (i.e. *-ten* added to the stem *zet-*)

Verbs with *v* or *z* in the infinitive:

The rule given above that states that the decision between *-te* and *-de* is based on the final sound of the stem is in fact a slight oversimplification, but it retains its validity if one remembers this one exception: verbs such as *reizen, verhuizen, geloven, leven* which contain a voiced consonant in the infinitive which becomes *s* and *f* in the stem, i.e. *reis, verhuis, geloof, leef* add *-de/-den* to this stem, i.e. *reisde, verhuisde, geloofde, leefde*. The *s* and *f* in such cases are, however, pronounced voiced.

One should be careful of verbs ending in *-eren*. Those with the stress on the first *e* of this ending are of French origin and add *-de/-den* after doubling the *e* of the ending, eg. *reserveren* (to reserve) – *reserveerde(n)*. Those of Dutch origin with the stress on the stem vowel do not double the *e*, eg. *luisteren* (to listen) – *luisterde, herinneren* (to remind) – *herinnerde*.

Strong verbs

There is but one form for the singular and one for the plural, eg. *binden* (to tie):

<i>ik bond</i>	<i>wij bonden</i>
<i>jij bond</i>	<i>jullie bonden</i>
<i>hij bond</i>	<i>zij bonden</i>

One should learn both the singular and the plural (as well as the past participle) by heart because in some ablaut series the two differ. The following examples will illustrate this:

	Sing.	Plur.
1. <i>schrijven</i> (to write)	<i>schreef</i>	<i>schreven</i>
2. <i>schieten</i> (to shoot)	<i>schoot</i>	<i>schoten</i>
<i>buigen</i> (to bend)	<i>boog</i>	<i>bogen</i>
<i>wegen</i> (to weigh)	<i>woog</i>	<i>wogen</i>
3. <i>drinken</i> (to drink)	<i>dronk</i>	<i>dronken</i>
4. <i>nemen</i> (to take)	<i>nam</i>	<i>namen</i>
5. <i>eten</i> (to eat)	<i>at</i>	<i>aten</i>
<i>zitten</i> (to sit)	<i>zat</i>	<i>zaten</i>
6. <i>dragen</i> (to wear)	<i>droeg</i>	<i>droegen</i>
7. <i>hangen</i> (to hang)	<i>hing</i>	<i>hingen</i>
<i>slapen</i> (to sleep)	<i>sliep</i>	<i>sliepen</i>

11.1.3 PERFECT TENSE (*de voltooid tegenwoordige tijd* – v.t.t.)

The perfect tense is a compound tense, i.e. it is formed from an auxiliary verb (either *hebben* or *zijn*, see p. 141) plus a derivative of the verb known as the past participle. In English the imperfect and the past participle of weak verbs are identical (eg. I worked, I have worked); in Dutch they are different and must not be confused.

As for the present and imperfect tenses, Dutch does not have an equivalent of the progressive or continuous form, i.e. I have been working (for exceptions see p. 165).

Weak verbs

1 Formation of the past participle: as for the imperfect of weak verbs the stem of the verb must be isolated; to this *ge-* is prefixed and *-t* or *-d* is suffixed: the rules for the choice of the latter are the same as for *-te* or *-de* in the imperfect (see p. 115), eg. *werken* – *gewerkt, horen* – *gehoord, reizen* – *gereisd, leven* – *geleefd*.

With the past participle, unlike the imperfect, if the stem already ends in *-t* or *-d*, no further *-t* or *-d* is added, eg. *zetten* – *gezet, branden* – *gebrand*. (It is in fact impossible in Dutch to have two of the same consonant at the end of a word.)

One should be careful with verbs ending in *-eren*. These are of two types:

a those of French origin with the stress on *-éren* and which thus double the *e* in the past participle to preserve the long vowels, eg. *reserveren* – *gereserveerd*.

b those native Dutch words with the stress on the stem vowel which do not double the *e*, eg. *luisteren* – *geluisterd, herinneren* – *herinnerd*.

2 The past participle is invariable for all persons; only the auxiliary verb is conjugated, eg.

<i>ik heb gewerkt</i>	<i>wij hebben gewerkt</i>
<i>jij hebt gewerkt</i>	<i>jullie hebben gewerkt</i>
<i>hij heeft gewerkt</i>	<i>zij hebben gewerkt</i>

For the use of *zijn* as an auxiliary verb in the perfect tense see p. 141.

3 Those verbs beginning with any of the following unstressed prefixes do not add *ge-* (which would be yet another unstressed prefix):

be-, er-, ge-, her-, ont-, ver-.

Examples: *beloven* (to promise) – *beloofd, erkennen* (to recognise) – *erkend, geloven*

(to believe) – *geloofd*, *herhalen* (to repeat) – *herhaald*, *ontmoeten* (to meet) – *ontmoet*, *vertalen* (to translate) – *vertaald*.

4 Past participles of weak verbs can be used as adjectives, as in English, and are inflected as normal adjectives, eg. *het vertaalde boek* – the translated book, *de gehate man* – the hated man (note spelling change).

Strong verbs

1 The past participle of strong verbs is formed by the prefixing of *ge-* to a root that may or may not have the same vowel as the stem or the imperfect (depending on the ablaut series), and the suffixing of *-en*. The past participles of those verbs given above, for example, are as follows:

1. <i>schrijven</i>	<i>geschreven</i>
2. <i>schieten</i>	<i>geschoten</i>
<i>buigen</i>	<i>gebogen</i>
<i>wegen</i>	<i>gewogen</i>
3. <i>drinken</i>	<i>gedronken</i>
4. <i>nemen</i>	<i>genomen</i>
5. <i>eten</i>	<i>gegeten</i>
<i>zitten</i>	<i>gezetten</i>
6. <i>dragen</i>	<i>gedragen</i>
7. <i>hangen</i>	<i>gehangen</i>
<i>slapen</i>	<i>geslapen</i>

2 As for weak verbs the past participle of strong verbs in conjunction with an auxiliary verb (either *hebben* or *zijn*) is invariable.

3 As with weak verbs there are also strong verbs with the unstressed prefixes *be-*, *er-*, *ge-*, *her-*, *ont-* and *ver-*. Such verbs simply add no *ge-* but behave otherwise as strong verbs in the perfect, eg.:

<i>verdrinken</i> (to drown)	<i>verdrongen</i>
<i>bewegen</i> (to move)	<i>bewogen</i>
<i>ontvangen</i> (to receive)	<i>ontvangen</i>

4 Past participles of strong verbs, like those of weak verbs, can be used as adjectives but there is one difference: as these all end by definition in *-en*, they are treated as adjectives like *open*, *eigen* and do not take an *-e* ending when used attributively, eg.:

<i>de gesloten deur</i>	the closed door
<i>de geschreven brief</i>	the written letter

When used substantively, however, they take both *-e* and *-en*, eg.:

<i>de betrokkene(n)</i>	the one(s) concerned
<i>de verbannene(n)</i>	the exiled one(s)

11.1.4 PLUPERFECT TENSE (*de voltooid verleden tijd* – *v.v.t.*)

The pluperfect, a compound tense like the perfect, is formed from the imperfect of an auxiliary verb (either *hebben* or *zijn*, see p. 141) plus the past participle which remains invariable. The pluperfect can be described as a 'past in the past', eg.:

He knew that I had worked.
Hij wist dat ik gewerkt had.
We had drunk enough.
Wij hadden genoeg gedronken.
He had gone home.
Hij was naar huis gegaan.

11.1.5 FUTURE TENSE (*de onvoltooid tegenwoordig toekomstige tijd* – *o.t.t.t.*)

1 The auxiliary used for the future tense which corresponds to English 'will' is the verb *zullen*; it is not the verb *willen* although these are occasions when an English non-temporal 'will' is translated by *willen* (see p. 153). *Zullen* is conjugated like a modal verb (singular – *zal*, plural – *zullen*) and can have modal as well as temporal qualities (see p. 124, 153). The future tense of all verbs is formed by the use of *zullen* plus the infinitive of the verb concerned; this infinitive is sent to the end of the clause, eg.:

Ik zal het brengen. I will bring it.
Wij zullen hem zien. We will see him.

2 The future can also be rendered by the verb *gaan* instead of *zullen*, as is the case in English, eg. I am going to buy a house tomorrow (I will...) *Ik ga morgen een huis kopen*. Is it going to rain? (i.e. will it rain?) *Gaat het regenen?* Never use this *gaan* with *komen*.

3 A third possible way of rendering the future, which also has a parallel in English, is by using the simple present tense, eg. He is buying a new car soon. (i.e. he will...) *Hij koopt binnenkort een nieuwe auto*. He is flying to Amsterdam tomorrow. (i.e. he will...) *Hij vliegt morgen naar Amsterdam*.

11.1.6 FUTURE PERFECT TENSE (*de voltooid tegenwoordig toekomstige tijd* – *v.t.t.t.*)

The future perfect in Dutch corresponds exactly to that in English, eg. he will have

done it – *hij zal het gedaan hebben* (or *hebben gedaan*), she will have gone home – *zij zal naar huis gegaan zijn* (or *zijn gegaan*), they will have shown it to me – *zij zullen het mij hebben laten zien*.

Note that the auxiliary 'have' is rendered by either *hebben* or *zijn* depending on which auxiliary the main verb normally takes in the perfect and pluperfect tenses, i.e. *hij heeft het gedaan, zij is naar huis gegaan*.

11.1.7 CONDITIONAL TENSE (*de onvoltooid verleden toekomstige tijd – o.v.t.t.*)

1 The conditional can be described as the past in the future. It is the tense that employs 'would + infinitive' in English. Just as English uses the past tense of its future auxiliary 'will' to form the conditional, so Dutch employs the past tense of *zullen*, i.e. singular – *zou*, plural – *zouden*. (The *gij* form is *zoudt* but is often used with *u*, particularly in inverted constructions to facilitate pronunciation, eg. *zoudt u dat willen?*)

(If...), she would believe him.

(Als...), *zou zij hem geloven*.

They would buy it, (if...)

Zij zouden het kopen (als...)

2 *Zou(den)* is also used in Dutch to express 'was/were going to', eg. I was going to go to Germany last year but ... – *Ik zou vorig jaar naar Duitsland gaan maar...*

3 There is one English 'would' which is not conditional in meaning and should not be translated with *zou(den)*, i.e. the one that means 'used to', eg. When I lived in Amsterdam I would often visit my aunt in Rotterdam – *toen ik in A'dam woonde, heb ik (or bezocht ik) vaak mijn tante in R'dam bezocht*.

4 A 'should' which means 'would' is rendered by *zou(den)* but otherwise by a form of *moeten* (see p. 152), eg. I should do it if I were you – *Ik zou het doen als ik jou was*.

11.1.8 CONDITIONAL PERFECT TENSE (*de voltooid verleden toekomstige tijd – v.v.t.t.*)

The conditional perfect is the past of the future perfect,

He would have seen it.

Hij zou het gezien hebben (or hebben gezien).

She would have gone.

Zij zou gegaan zijn (or zijn gegaan).

They would have shown it to me.

Zij zouden het mij hebben laten zien.

Contracted conditional perfects:

Because the conditional perfect employs two auxiliaries (*zou/zouden + hebben/zijn*) in addition to one or two infinitives, there is a tendency to contract the auxiliaries into one form, i.e. as in German *hätte* and *wäre*. This is actually a remnant of the former imperfect subjunctive although the forms are identical to the imperfect of *hebben* and *zijn* nowadays,

hij zou het gezien hebben – hij had het gezien (als...)

hij zou gegaan zijn – hij was gegaan (als...)

hij zou het mij hebben laten zien – hij had het mij laten zien (als...)

Confusion with the imperfect is usually avoided by context, i.e. there is always an 'if' clause preceding, following or implied.

Although it is not compulsory to contract, in cases like the third example where there are four verbs, it is preferable to reduce the number to three by such contraction. (For further verbal contractions see modal verbs.)

11.2 Use of tenses

11.2.1 PRESENT TENSE

The present tense is used as in English with the following exceptions:

1 Dutch has its own idiomatic way of expressing the present continuous (i.e. he is reading a book, see p. 165) and the emphatic present (i.e. he does like fish, see p. 166).

2 The present tense is used even more extensively in Dutch than in English to express the future; it is in fact the most usual way of expressing the future. (see p. 119)

3 An English perfect followed by 'for' plus an expression of time is rendered by the present tense in Dutch as the action of the verb is seen not to have been completed but still continuing into the present,

I have been living here for ten years.

Ik woon hier al tien jaar.

A similar construction is required in sentences introduced by 'how long',

How long has he been learning Dutch?

Hoe lang leert hij al Nederlands?

(see p. 97)

11.2.2 IMPERFECT TENSE

1 Some confusion about when to use the imperfect arises because of the common practice in Dutch of using the perfect where English uses the imperfect (see Perfect tense). The real difficulty associated with use of the imperfect in Dutch is in recognising the few occasions when it cannot be replaced by the perfect. It is also particularly difficult to give rules for when it must be used. Generally speaking it tends to be used for narrating a series of events in the past. When mentioning isolated actions or listing a sequence of separate actions in the past, the perfect tense is normally preferred, however.

The verbs *zijn* and *hebben* are more commonly used in the imperfect than the perfect,

Wat had je in je hand?

What did you have in your hand?

Hoe was het weer die avond?

What was the weather like that night?

The perfect would, however, not be wrong in such cases.

In the following examples *hebben* and *zijn* indicate a permanent state rather than a momentary action like *zingen* and *doodgaan* and thus they must be in the imperfect:

Zij heeft langer gezongen dan ik en zij had een mooiere stem.

She sang longer than I and she had a nicer voice.

Onze hond is net doodgegaan. Maar ja, hij was dan ook erg oud.

Our dog (has) just died. But then he was very old.

A sentence such as 'Have you ever been to England?' containing the verb 'to be' which can be and usually is rendered literally by a perfect in Dutch, can also use an imperfect, however: *Ben je ooit in Engeland geweest?/Was je ooit in Engeland?*

The former sounds better, however.

The imperfect is always used after the conjunction *toen* (when),

Hij lag nog in bed toen ik bij hem kwam.

Liggen must also be in the imperfect here as it describes a state, not an action, which was current when the action, i.e. arriving, occurred.

2 Dutch has its own idiomatic ways of expressing the imperfect continuous and emphatic, i.e. he was reading a book, he did like fish (see p. 165-166).

3 There is one imperfect in Dutch which replaces an English pluperfect.

Hij lag er al uren toen ik bij hem kwam.

He had been lying there for hours when I got to his place.

Here, as with the present tense (see Present tense 3), the action of the first clause is seen as still continuing when the action of the second occurs and thus an imperfect must be used for the first action; a pluperfect (in Dutch) would imply that he was no longer lying there when I arrived, but that he had been lying there.

4 Two variant forms of the imperfect in English which often cause confusion are those indicating habit or custom which employ the auxiliaries 'used to' and 'would'.

We used to live in Amsterdam.

When we lived in Amsterdam we would often go to the National Museum.

In the first example the Dutch use either the imperfect or the perfect and express the habitual aspect with *vroeger* (earlier, formerly).

Wij woonden vroeger in A'dam; wij hebben vroeger in A'dam gewoond.

In the second example the conjunction *toen* determines the use of the imperfect in the first clause, and the 'would', which is equivalent in meaning to 'used to', is rendered as in the first example with an adverb.

Toen wij in A'dam woonden, gingen we dikwijls naar het Rijksmuseum.

Such sentences expressing habituality often employ the verb *plegen* (to be accustomed to) in very formal style,

Het karretje waarmee hij altijd naar de stad placht te rijden,...

The cart in which he would always (always used to) ride to town,...

5 One should also beware of what seem to be imperfects in Dutch but which are in fact contracted conditionals (see p. 124, 149).

11.2.3 PERFECT TENSE

1 It is in the use of the perfect that Dutch tenses differ most from those of English. The basic rule for the use of the perfect is as follows:

All perfects in English are rendered by perfects in Dutch (with one exception, see Present tense 3), but most imperfects in English may be rendered by imperfects or perfects in Dutch, the perfect tense being more common, particularly in speech (for the few instances where English imperfects must be imperfects in Dutch, see Imperfect tense above).

For example, the sentence 'He bought a car yesterday.' can only use an imperfect in English as the time of the action is mentioned; 'He has bought a car', without any mention of the time, is possible however. In Dutch the latter would also always use a perfect but the former could employ either an imperfect or a perfect.

hij heeft gisteren een auto gekocht; hij kocht gisteren een auto

but only

hij heeft een auto gekocht.

11.2.4 PLUPERFECT TENSE

1 The pluperfect tense is used as in English (with one exception – see Imperfect tense 3).

2 Dutch has its own idiomatic ways of expressing the pluperfect continuous, i.e. he had been reading a book for hours (see p. 165).

11.2.5 FUTURE TENSE

The use of the future tense is very similar in Dutch and English, including the tendency to use the verb 'to go' *-gaan* and the present tense for actions in the future (see p. 119). The main notable difference is that Dutch uses the present tense more than English to express the future (see p. 119, 121).

It should be noted that English 'will' often does not denote a future and in such instances Dutch uses *willen*, not *zullen* (see p. 153).

11.2.6 FUTURE PERFECT TENSE

There is no difference between English and Dutch in the use of this tense except the tendency for Dutch to use *zullen* in a modal sense with no connotation of the future.

Dat zal in andere landen ook wel gedaan zijn.

That's sure to have been done in other countries too.

Hij zal het zeker gedaan hebben.

He did it for sure.

11.2.7 CONDITIONAL TENSE

1 The conditional is used as in English except that the verb in the 'if' clause of a conditional sentence, which in English is often in the imperfect, can be either a conditional or an imperfect in Dutch.

Als je meer geld zou hebben (had),...

If you had more money,...

Als hij minder zou drinken (dronk),...

If he drank less,...

By using the conditional in such instances the Dutch are trying to compensate for an historical simplification that has affected both English and Dutch, i.e. the falling together of the imperfect subjunctive with the imperfect.

Compare: If I were rich... – *Als ik rijk was (zou zijn),...*
(see p. 121)

2 *Zou(den)* is often used to render English 'was/were going to' or 'intended to'.

Vader zou mij voor Sinterklaas een brommer geven maar ik kreeg een fiets.

Father was going to give me a moped for St. Nicholas but I got a bike.

11.2.8 CONDITIONAL PERFECT TENSE

There are no differences between English and Dutch in the use of this tense but beware of contractions (see p. 121).

11.3 Alphabetical list of strong and irregular verbs

Roman numerals refer to the class to which the verb belongs (see p. 128). The abbreviation m.v. stands for mixed verbs, i.v. for irregular verbs and mo. for modal verbs.

<i>bakken</i>	m.v.	<i>dingen</i>	III
<i>barsten</i>	m.v.	<i>doen</i>	i.v.
<i>bedelven</i>	III, m.v.	<i>dragen</i>	VI
<i>bederven</i>	III	<i>drijven</i>	I
<i>bedriegen</i>	II	<i>dringen</i>	III
<i>beginnen</i>	III	<i>drinken</i>	III
<i>begrijpen</i>	I	<i>druipen</i>	II
<i>belijden</i>	I	<i>duiken</i>	II
<i>(op)bergen</i>	III	<i>dunken</i>	i.v.
<i>bevelen</i>	IV	<i>durven</i>	mo.
<i>bewegen</i>	II	<i>dwingen</i>	III
<i>bezwijken</i>	I	<i>eten</i>	V
<i>bidden</i>	V	<i>fluiten</i>	II
<i>bieden</i>	II	<i>gaan</i>	i.v.
<i>bijten</i>	I	<i>gelden</i>	III
<i>binden</i>	III	<i>genezen</i>	V
<i>blazen</i>	VII	<i>genieten</i>	II
<i>blijken</i>	I	<i>geven</i>	V
<i>blijven</i>	I	<i>gieten</i>	II
<i>blinken</i>	III	<i>glijden</i>	I
<i>braden</i>	m.v.	<i>glimmen</i>	III
<i>breken</i>	IV	<i>graven</i>	VI
<i>brengen</i>	i.v.	<i>grijpen</i>	I
<i>brouwen</i>	m.v.	<i>hangen</i>	VII
<i>buigen</i>	II	<i>hebben</i>	i.v.
<i>delven</i>	III, m.v.	<i>heffen</i>	VII
<i>denken</i>	i.v.	<i>helpen</i>	III

heten m.v.
hijsen I
houden VII
houwen VII
jagen VI, m.v.
kiezen II
kijken I
kijven I
klimmen III
klinken III
kluiven II
knijpen I
komen IV
kopen i.v.
krijgen I
krimpen III
kruijen II
kunnen mo.
kwijten I
lachen m.v.
laden m.v.
laten VII
lezen IV
liegen II
liggen V
lijden I
lijken I
lopen VII
malen m.v.
melken III
meten IV
mijden I
moeten mo.
mogen mo.
nemen IV
nijgen I
nijpen I
ontginnen III
overlijden I
plegen i.v.
pluizen II
prijzen I
raden VII, m.v.

rijden I
rijgen I
rijten I
rijzen I
roepen VII
ruiken II
scheppen VII
scheiden m.v.
schelden III
schenden III
schenden III
scheren II
schieten II
schijnen I
schrijden I
schrijven I
schrikken III
schuiven II
slaan VI, i.v.
slapen VII
slijpen I
slijten I
slinken III
sluipen II
sluiten II
smelten III
smijten I
snijden I
snuiten II
snuiven II
spannen m.v.
spijten I
spinnen III
splijten I
spreken IV
springen III
spruiten II
spugen II
spuiten II
staan I
steken IV
stelen IV
sterven III

stijgen I
stijven I
stinken III
stoten VII, m.v.
strijden I
strijken I
stuiven II
treden V
treffen III
trekken III
vallen VII
vangen VII
varen VI
vechten III
verbieden II
verdelgen III
verdrieten II
verdwijnen I
vergelijken I
vergeten V
verliezen II
vermijden I
verraden VII
verschuilen II, m.v.
verslijten I
verslinden III
verwijten I
verwijzen I
verzinnen III
verzwelgen III
vinden III
vlechten III
vlieden II
vliegen II
vragen VI, m.v.
vouwen m.v.
vreten IV
vriezen II

waaien VI, m.v.
wassen VII, m.v.
wegen II
werpen III
werven III
weten i.v.
weven m.v.
wijken I
wijten I
wijzen I
willen mo.
winden III
winnen III
worden i.v.
wreken m.v.
wrijven I
wringen III
zeggen i.v.
zenden III
zien IV, i.v.
zijken I
zijn i.v.
zingen III
zinken III
zinnen III
zitten V
zoeken i.v.
zouten m.v.
zuigen II
zuipen II
zullen mo.
zwelgen III
zwellen III
zwemmen III
zweren II, m.v.
zwerpen III
zwijgen I

11.3.1 STRONG AND IRREGULAR VERBS

The numbers refer to the ablaut series to which these verbs belong historically (see p. 112, 116).

* = verbs conjugated only with *zijn*

+ = verbs conjugated with *hebben* or *zijn*

I All verbs with *ij* in the stem belong in this group except for a few formed from non-verbal parts of speech, eg. *benijden* (to envy), *bevrijden* (to liberate), *kastijden* (to chastise), *verblijden* (to gladden), *verslijken* (to silt up), *wijden* (to consecrate, devote) etc.; these are weak.

<i>begrijpen</i>	<i>begreep</i>	<i>begrepen</i>	<i>begrepen</i>	to understand
<i>belijden</i>	<i>beleed</i>	<i>beleden</i>	<i>beleden</i>	to confess
<i>bezwijken*</i>	<i>bezweek</i>	<i>bezweken</i>	<i>bezweken</i>	to succumb
<i>bijten</i>	<i>beet</i>	<i>beten</i>	<i>gebeten</i>	to bite
<i>blijken*</i>	<i>bleek</i>	<i>bleken</i>	<i>gebleken</i>	to appear
<i>blijven*</i>	<i>bleef</i>	<i>bleven</i>	<i>gebleven</i>	to remain, stay
<i>drijven*</i>	<i>dreef</i>	<i>dreven</i>	<i>gedreven</i>	to float, drive
<i>glijden*</i>	<i>gleed</i>	<i>gleden</i>	<i>gegleden</i>	to glide, slide
<i>grijpen</i>	<i>greep</i>	<i>grepen</i>	<i>gegrepen</i>	to seize, grab
<i>hijsen</i>	<i>hees</i>	<i>hesen</i>	<i>gehesen</i>	to hoist, lift
<i>kijken</i>	<i>keek</i>	<i>keken</i>	<i>gekeken</i>	to look
<i>kijven</i>	<i>keef</i>	<i>keven</i>	<i>gekeven</i>	to quarrel
<i>(k)nijpen</i>	<i>(k)neep</i>	<i>(k)nepen</i>	<i>ge(k)nepen</i>	to pinch
<i>krijgen</i>	<i>kreeg</i>	<i>kregen</i>	<i>gekregen</i>	to get, receive
<i>zich kwijten</i>	<i>kweet</i>	<i>kweten</i>	<i>gekweten</i>	to acquit oneself of
<i>van</i>				
<i>lijden</i>	<i>leed</i>	<i>leden</i>	<i>geleden</i>	to suffer
<i>lijken</i>	<i>leek</i>	<i>leken</i>	<i>geleken</i>	to seem, resemble
<i>nijgen</i>	<i>neeg</i>	<i>negen</i>	<i>genegen</i>	to bow
<i>overlijden*</i>	<i>overleed</i>	<i>overleden</i>	<i>overleden</i>	to pass away
<i>prijzen</i>	<i>prees</i>	<i>prezen</i>	<i>geprezen</i>	to praise
<i>rijden*</i>	<i>reed</i>	<i>reden</i>	<i>gereden</i>	to ride, drive
<i>rijgen</i>	<i>reeg</i>	<i>regen</i>	<i>geregen</i>	to string (beads), tack (sewing)
<i>rijten</i>	<i>reet</i>	<i>reten</i>	<i>gereten</i>	to tear
<i>rijzen*</i>	<i>rees</i>	<i>rezen</i>	<i>gerezen</i>	to rise
<i>schijnen</i>	<i>scheen</i>	<i>schenen</i>	<i>geschenen</i>	to seem, shine
<i>schrijden*</i>	<i>schreed</i>	<i>schreden</i>	<i>geschreden</i>	to stride
<i>schrijven</i>	<i>schreef</i>	<i>schreven</i>	<i>geschreven</i>	to write
<i>slijpen</i>	<i>sleep</i>	<i>slepen</i>	<i>geslepen</i>	to sharpen
<i>smijten</i>	<i>smeet</i>	<i>smeten</i>	<i>gesmeten</i>	to throw
<i>snijden</i>	<i>sneed</i>	<i>sneden</i>	<i>gesneden</i>	to cut

<i>spijten</i>	<i>speet</i>	<i>speten</i>	<i>gespeten</i>	to be sorry
<i>splijten</i>	<i>spleet</i>	<i>spleten</i>	<i>gespleten</i>	to split
<i>stijgen*</i>	<i>steeg</i>	<i>stegen</i>	<i>gestegen</i>	to rise, climb
<i>stijven</i>	<i>steef</i>	<i>steven</i>	<i>gesteven</i>	to stiffen
<i>strijden</i>	<i>streed</i>	<i>streden</i>	<i>gestreden</i>	to fight
<i>strijken</i>	<i>streek</i>	<i>streken</i>	<i>gestreken</i>	to iron, lower (flag)
<i>verdwijnen*</i>	<i>verdween</i>	<i>verdwenen</i>	<i>verdwenen</i>	to disappear
<i>vergelijken</i>	<i>vergeleek</i>	<i>vergeleken</i>	<i>vergeleken</i>	to compare
<i>(ver)mijden</i>	<i>(ver)meed</i>	<i>(ver)meden</i>	<i>(ver)meden</i>	to avoid
<i>(ver)slijten*</i>	<i>(ver)sleet</i>	<i>(ver)sleten</i>	<i>(ver)sleten</i>	to wear (out)
<i>(ver)wijten</i>	<i>(ver)weet</i>	<i>(ver)weten</i>	<i>(ver)weten</i>	to reproach
<i>(ver)wijzen</i>	<i>(ver)wees</i>	<i>(ver)wezen</i>	<i>(ver)wezen</i>	to (refer), show
<i>wijken*</i>	<i>week</i>	<i>weken</i>	<i>geweken</i>	to yield, retreat
<i>wrijven</i>	<i>wreef</i>	<i>wreven</i>	<i>gewreven</i>	to rub
<i>zwijgen</i>	<i>zweeg</i>	<i>zwegen</i>	<i>gezwegen</i>	to be silent

II Not all verbs with *ui* and *ie* are irregular,

huilen (to cry), *hulde*, *gehuild*
spieden (to spy), *spiedde*, *gespied*

also

bruisen (to fizz), *gebruiken* (to use), *getuigen* (to testify), *kruisen* (to cross),
verhuizen (to shift), *wuiven* (to wave), *geschieden* (to happen), *wieden* (to weed)
 etc.

<i>buigen</i>	<i>boog</i>	<i>bogen</i>	<i>gebogen</i>	to bend, bow
<i>druipen</i>	<i>droop</i>	<i>dropen</i>	<i>gedropen</i>	to drip
<i>duiken*</i>	<i>dook</i>	<i>doken</i>	<i>gedoken</i>	to dive
<i>fluiten</i>	<i>floot</i>	<i>floten</i>	<i>gefloten</i>	to whistle
<i>kluiven</i>	<i>kloof</i>	<i>kloven</i>	<i>gekloven</i>	to pick a bone
<i>kruipen*</i>	<i>kroop</i>	<i>kropen</i>	<i>gekropen</i>	to crawl, creep
<i>pluizen</i>	<i>ploos</i>	<i>plozen</i>	<i>geplozen</i>	to give off fluff
<i>ruiken</i>	<i>rook</i>	<i>roken</i>	<i>geroken</i>	to smell
<i>schuiven*</i>	<i>schoof</i>	<i>schoven</i>	<i>geschoven</i>	to push, shove
<i>sluipen</i>	<i>sloop</i>	<i>slopen</i>	<i>geslopen</i>	to steal, sneak
<i>sluiten</i>	<i>sloot</i>	<i>sloten</i>	<i>gesloten</i>	to close
<i>snuiten</i>	<i>snoot</i>	<i>snoten</i>	<i>gesnoten</i>	to blow one's nose
<i>snuiven</i>	<i>snoof</i>	<i>snoven</i>	<i>gesnoven</i>	to sniff
<i>spruiten*</i>	<i>sproot</i>	<i>spoten</i>	<i>gesproken</i>	to sprout
<i>spuiten</i>	<i>spoot</i>	<i>spoten</i>	<i>gespoten</i>	to spout, squirt, spray
<i>stuiven</i>	<i>stoof</i>	<i>stoven</i>	<i>gestoven</i>	to be dusty, rush

<i>verschuilen</i>	<i>verschool</i>	<i>verscholen</i>	<i>verscholen</i>	to hide
	<i>verschuilde</i>	<i>verschuilden</i>	<i>verscholen</i>	
<i>zuigen</i> ²	<i>zoog</i>	<i>zogen</i>	<i>gezogen</i>	to suck
<i>zuipen</i>	<i>zoop</i>	<i>zopen</i>	<i>gezopen</i>	to booze
<i>spugen</i>	<i>spoog</i>	<i>spogen</i>	<i>gespogen</i>	to spit
<i>bedriegen</i>	<i>bedroog</i>	<i>bedrogen</i>	<i>bedrogen</i>	to deceive
<i>bieden</i>	<i>bood</i>	<i>boden</i>	<i>geboden</i>	to offer
<i>genieten</i>	<i>genoot</i>	<i>genoten</i>	<i>genoten</i>	to enjoy
<i>gieten</i>	<i>goot</i>	<i>goten</i>	<i>gegoten</i>	to pour
<i>kiezen</i>	<i>koos</i>	<i>kozen</i>	<i>gekozen</i>	to choose
<i>liegen</i>	<i>loog</i>	<i>logen</i>	<i>gelogen</i>	to lie, tell lies
<i>schieten</i>	<i>schoot</i>	<i>schoten</i>	<i>geschoten</i>	to shoot
<i>verbieden</i>	<i>verbod</i>	<i>verboden</i>	<i>verboden</i>	to forbid
<i>verdrieten</i>	<i>verdroot</i>	<i>verdroten</i>	<i>verdroten</i>	to vex; sadden
<i>verliezen</i> ³	<i>verloor</i>	<i>veloren</i>	<i>verloren</i>	to lose
<i>vlieden</i> ⁺ (lit.)	<i>vlood</i>	<i>vloten</i>	<i>gevloden</i>	to flee
<i>vliegen</i> ⁺	<i>vloog</i>	<i>vlogen</i>	<i>gevlogen</i>	to fly
<i>vriezen</i>	<i>vroom</i>	<i>vroren</i>	<i>gevroren</i>	to freeze
<i>wegen</i>	<i>woog</i>	<i>wogen</i>	<i>gewogen</i>	to weight
<i>bewegen</i>	<i>bewoog</i>	<i>bewogen</i>	<i>bewogen</i>	to move
<i>scheren</i>	<i>schoor</i>	<i>schoren</i>	<i>geschoren</i>	to shear, shave
<i>zweren</i> ⁴	<i>zweerde</i>	<i>zweerden</i>	<i>gezworen</i>	to fester
archaic:	<i>zwoor</i>	<i>zwoeren</i>		to fester
III				
<i>beginnen</i> [*]	<i>begon</i>	<i>begonnen</i>	<i>begonnen</i>	to begin
<i>(op)bergen</i>	<i>borg (op)</i>	<i>borgen (op)</i>	<i>(op)geborgen</i>	to store
<i>binden</i>	<i>bond</i>	<i>bonden</i>	<i>gebonden</i>	to bind
<i>blinken</i>	<i>blonk</i>	<i>blonken</i>	<i>geblonken</i>	to shine
<i>(be)delven</i>	<i>delfde</i>	<i>delfden</i>	<i>gedolven</i>	to (bury), dig
<i>dingen</i>	<i>dong</i>	<i>dongen</i>	<i>gedongen</i>	to haggle
<i>dringen</i> ⁺	<i>drong</i>	<i>drongen</i>	<i>gedrongen</i>	to push, crowd
<i>drinken</i>	<i>dronk</i>	<i>dronken</i>	<i>gedronken</i>	to drink

2 *Stofzuigen* is regular, i.e. *stofzuigde*, *gestofzuigd*.

3 One will hear both *ik ben mijn pen verloren* and *ik heb mijn pen verloren* with no difference in meaning. See also *vergeten*.

4 See group VI for *zweren* – to swear.

<i>dwingen</i>	<i>dwong</i>	<i>dwongen</i>	<i>gedwongen</i>	to force
<i>gelden</i>	<i>gold</i>	<i>golden</i>	<i>gedgolden</i>	to be valid
<i>glimmen</i>	<i>glom</i>	<i>glommen</i>	<i>geglommen</i>	to glimmer, shine
<i>klimmen</i> ⁺	<i>klom</i>	<i>klommen</i>	<i>geklommen</i>	to climb
<i>klinken</i>	<i>klonk</i>	<i>klonken</i>	<i>geklonken</i>	to sound
<i>krimpen</i> ⁺	<i>kromp</i>	<i>krompen</i>	<i>gekrompen</i>	to shrink
<i>melken</i>	<i>molk</i>	<i>molken</i>	<i>gemolken</i>	to milk
<i>ontginnen</i>	<i>ontgon</i>	<i>ontgonnen</i>	<i>ontgonnen</i>	to open up, reclaim (land)
<i>schelden</i>	<i>schold</i>	<i>scholden</i>	<i>gescholden</i>	to abuse
<i>schenden</i>	<i>schond</i>	<i>schonden</i>	<i>geschonden</i>	to violate
<i>schenken</i>	<i>schonk</i>	<i>schonken</i>	<i>geschonken</i>	to pour, give
<i>schrikken</i> ^{*5}	<i>schrok</i>	<i>schrokken</i>	<i>geschrokken</i>	to be frightened
<i>slinken</i> [*]	<i>slonk</i>	<i>slonken</i>	<i>geslonken</i>	to shrink
<i>smelten</i> ⁺	<i>smolt</i>	<i>smolten</i>	<i>gesmolten</i>	to melt
<i>spinnen</i> ⁺	<i>spon</i>	<i>sponnen</i>	<i>gesponnen</i>	to spin
<i>springen</i> ⁺	<i>sprong</i>	<i>sprongen</i>	<i>gesprongen</i>	to jump
<i>stinken</i>	<i>stonk</i>	<i>stonken</i>	<i>gestonken</i>	to stink, smell
<i>treffen</i>	<i>trof</i>	<i>troffen</i>	<i>getroffen</i>	to hit
<i>trekken</i> ⁺⁶	<i>trok</i>	<i>trokken</i>	<i>getrokken</i>	to pull
<i>vechten</i>	<i>vocht</i>	<i>vochten</i>	<i>gevochten</i>	to fight
<i>verslinden</i>	<i>verslond</i>	<i>verslonden</i>	<i>verslonden</i>	to devour
<i>verzwelgen</i>	<i>verzwolg</i>	<i>verzwolgen</i>	<i>verzwolgen</i>	to swallow up
<i>vinden</i>	<i>vond</i>	<i>vonden</i>	<i>gevonden</i>	to find
<i>vlechten</i>	<i>vlocht</i>	<i>vlochten</i>	<i>gevlochten</i>	to plait
<i>winden</i>	<i>wond</i>	<i>wonden</i>	<i>gewonden</i>	to wind
<i>winnen</i>	<i>won</i>	<i>wonnen</i>	<i>gewonnen</i>	to win
<i>wringen</i>	<i>wrong</i>	<i>wrongen</i>	<i>gewrongen</i>	to wring
<i>zenden</i>	<i>zond</i>	<i>zonden</i>	<i>gezonden</i>	to send
<i>zingen</i>	<i>zong</i>	<i>zongen</i>	<i>gezongen</i>	to sing
<i>zinken</i> [*]	<i>zonk</i>	<i>zonken</i>	<i>gezonken</i>	to sink
<i>(ver)zinnen</i>	<i>zon</i>	<i>zonnen</i>	<i>gezonnen</i>	to ponder, muse
<i>zwellen</i> [*]	<i>zwol</i>	<i>zwoollen</i>	<i>gezwollen</i>	to swell
<i>zwemmen</i> ⁺	<i>zwom</i>	<i>zwoommen</i>	<i>gezwommen</i>	to swim
<i>bederven</i>	<i>bedierf</i>	<i>bedierven</i>	<i>bedorven</i>	to spoil
<i>helpen</i>	<i>hielp</i>	<i>hielpen</i>	<i>geholpen</i>	to help
<i>sterven</i> [*]	<i>stierf</i>	<i>stierven</i>	<i>gestorven</i>	to die
<i>werpen</i>	<i>wierp</i>	<i>wierpen</i>	<i>geworpen</i>	to throw

5 The related verbs *verschrikken* and *opschrikken* are regular.

6 *Trekken* takes *zijn* in various compounds, eg. *vertrekken* (to depart), *wegtrekken* (to go away).

werven	wierf	wierven	geworven	to recruit	slaan ⁸	sloeg	sloegen	geslagen	to hit
zwerfen	zwierf	zwierven	gezworven	to wander, roam	varen ⁺	voer	voeren	gevaren	to sail, go (by ship)
IV					vragen	vroeg	vroegen	gevraagd	to ask
bevelen	beval	bevalen	bevolen	to order, command	waaien	woei	woeien	gewaaid	to blow (wind)
breken	brak	braken	gebroken	to break		waaide	waaiden	gewaaid	
komen*	kwam	kwamen	gekomen	to come	zweren	zwoer	zwoeren	gezworen	to swear (an oath)
nemen	nam	namen	genomen	to take	VII				
spreken	sprak	spraken	gesproken	to speak	blazen	blies	bliezen	geblazen	to blow
steken	stak	staken	gestoken	to stab	hangen	hing	hingen	gehangen	to hang
stelen	stal	stalen	gestolen	to steal	heffen	hief	hieven	geheven	to lift
V					houden	hield	hielden	gehouden	to hold
bidden	bad	baden	gebeden	to pray	houwen ⁹	hieuw	hieuwen	gehouden	to hew
eten	at	aten	gegeten	to eat	laten	liet	lieten	gelaten	to let, allow
genezen ⁺	genas	genazen	genezen	to heal	lopen ⁺	liep	liepen	gelopen	to walk
geven	gaf	gaven	gegeven	to give	raden ¹⁰	raadde	raadden	geraden	to guess, advise
lezen	las	lazen	gelezen	to read	archaic:	ried	rieden		
liggen	lag	lagen	gelegen	to lie	roepen	riep	riepen	geroepen	to call
meten	mat	maten	gemeten	to measure	scheppen ¹¹	schiep	schiepen	geschapen	to create
treden*	trad	traden	getreden	to tread, step	slapen	sliep	sliepen	geslapen	to sleep
vergeten ⁺⁷	vergat	vergaten	vergeten	to forget	stoten	stootte	stootten	gestoten	to push, shove
vreten	vrat	vraten	gevreten	to gorge, eat (of animals)	archaic:	stiet	stieten		
zien	zag	zagen	gezien	to see	vallen*	viel	vielen	gevallen	to fall
zitten	zat	zaten	gezetten	to sit	vangen	ving	vingen	gevangen	to catch
VI					verraden	verried	verrieden	verraden	to betray
dragen	droeg	droegen	gedragen	to carry	wassen* ¹²	wies	wiesen	gewassen	to grow, wax
graven	groef	groeven	gegraven	to dig	wassen	waste	wasten	gewassen	to wash
jagen	joeg	joegen	gejaagd	to chase	archaic:	wies	wiesen		
	jaagde	jaagden	gejaagd	to hunt					

7 The criteria for the use of *zijn* or *hebben* with *vergeten* are different from those for other verbs marked ⁺: when the meaning is 'to have left something behind' *hebben* may be used but when a fact etc. has been forgotten only *zijn* can be employed; in practice *zijn* is more commonly used in both cases. (see p. 145)

Ik ben (heb) mijn regenjas vergeten.
Ik ben het woord nu vergeten.

8 *Slaan* should not be confused with the regular verb *slagen* (to succeed; pass an exam). Note the past participle is *geslagen*, not *geslaan*.

9 The compound *beeldhouwen* (to sculpt) is weak: *beeldhouwde*, *gebeeldhouwd*.

10 Nowadays *raden* is only used in the meaning of to guess. To advise is rendered by *aanraden* which is weak.

11 There is also a regular verb *scheppen* (to scoop, ladle).

12 *Wassen* (to grow) is archaic and is usually replaced by *groeien*, except in standard expressions, eg. *de wassende maan* – the waxing moon.

11.3.2 MIXED VERBS

<i>bakken</i>	<i>bakte</i>	<i>bakten</i>	<i>gebakken</i>	to bake
<i>barsten*</i>	<i>barstte</i>	<i>barstten</i>	<i>gebarsten</i>	to burst
<i>braden</i>	<i>braadde</i>	<i>braadden</i>	<i>gebraden</i>	to roast
<i>brouwen</i>	<i>brouwde</i>	<i>brouwden</i>	<i>gebrouwen</i>	to brew
<i>heten</i>	<i>heette</i>	<i>heetten</i>	<i>geheten</i>	to be called
<i>lachen</i> ¹³	<i>lachte</i>	<i>lachten</i>	<i>gelachen</i>	to laugh
<i>laden</i>	<i>laadde</i>	<i>laadden</i>	<i>geladen</i>	to load
<i>malen</i>	<i>maalde</i>	<i>maalden</i>	<i>gemalen</i>	to grind
<i>scheiden</i>	<i>scheidde</i>	<i>scheidde</i>	<i>gescheiden</i>	to separate
<i>spannen</i>	<i>spande</i>	<i>spanden</i>	<i>gespannen</i>	to stretch
<i>vouwen</i>	<i>vouwde</i>	<i>vouwden</i>	<i>gevouwen</i>	to fold
<i>weven</i>	<i>weefde</i>	<i>weefden</i>	<i>geweven</i>	to weave
<i>wreken</i>	<i>wreekte</i>	<i>wreekten</i>	<i>gewroken</i>	to avenge, revenge
<i>zouten</i>	<i>zoutte</i>	<i>zoutten</i>	<i>gezouten</i>	to salt

Verbs in this sub-group also have an archaic strong imperfect. See list of strong verbs.

<i>(be)delven</i>	<i>delfde</i>	<i>delfden</i>	<i>gedolven</i>	to (bury), dig
<i>raden</i>	<i>raadde</i>	<i>raadde</i>	<i>geraden</i>	to advise, guess
<i>stoten</i>	<i>stootte</i>	<i>stootten</i>	<i>gestoten</i>	to push, shove
<i>wassen</i>	<i>waste</i>	<i>wasten</i>	<i>gewassen</i>	to wash
<i>zweren</i>	<i>zweerde</i>	<i>zweerden</i>	<i>gezworen</i>	to fester

Jagen and *waaien* also have a weak imperfect; in the case of *jagen* the weak imperfect has a different meaning, i.e. to hunt.

<i>jagen</i>	<i>joeg</i>	<i>joegen</i>	<i>gejaagd</i>	to chase
<i>waaien</i>	<i>woei</i>	<i>woeien</i>	<i>gewaaid</i>	to blow (wind)
<i>vragen</i>	<i>vroeg</i>	<i>vroegen</i>	<i>gevraagd</i>	to ask

11.3.3 IRREGULAR VERBS

<i>brengen</i>	<i>bracht</i>	<i>brachten</i>	<i>gebracht</i>	to bring
<i>denken</i>	<i>dacht</i>	<i>dachten</i>	<i>gedacht</i>	to think
<i>dunken</i>	<i>docht</i>			to think, seem
<i>kopen</i>	<i>kocht</i>	<i>kochten</i>	<i>gekocht</i>	to buy
<i>plegen</i> ¹⁴	<i>placht</i>	<i>plachten</i>		to be used to
<i>zoeken</i>	<i>zocht</i>	<i>zochten</i>	<i>gezocht</i>	to look for, seek
<i>doen</i>	<i>deed</i>	<i>deden</i>	<i>gedaan</i>	to do
<i>gaan*</i>	<i>ging</i>	<i>gingen</i>	<i>gegaan</i>	to go
<i>slaan</i>	<i>sloeg</i>	<i>sloegen</i>	<i>geslagen</i>	to hit
<i>staan</i>	<i>stond</i>	<i>stonden</i>	<i>gestaan</i>	to stand
<i>zien</i>	<i>zag</i>	<i>zagen</i>	<i>gezien</i>	to see
<i>hebben</i>	<i>had</i>	<i>hadden</i>	<i>gehad</i>	to have
<i>weten</i>	<i>wist</i>	<i>wisten</i>	<i>geweten</i>	to know
<i>worden*</i>	<i>werd</i>	<i>werden</i>	<i>geworden</i>	to become
<i>zeggen</i>	<i>zei</i>	<i>zeiden</i>	<i>gezegd</i>	to say
<i>zijn*</i>	<i>was</i>	<i>waren</i>	<i>geweest</i>	to be

11.3.4 MODAL VERBS

<i>durven</i>	<i>durfde</i>	<i>durfden</i>	<i>gedurfd</i>	to dare
archaic:	<i>dorst</i>	<i>dorsten</i>		
<i>kunnen</i>	<i>kon</i>	<i>konden</i>	<i>gekund</i>	to be able
<i>moeten</i>	<i>moest</i>	<i>moesten</i>	<i>gemoeten</i>	to have to
<i>mogen</i>	<i>mocht</i>	<i>mochten</i>	<i>gemogen</i> ¹⁵	to be allowed to
<i>willen</i>	<i>wilde</i>	<i>wilden</i>	<i>gewild</i>	to want to
	<i>wou</i>			
<i>zullen</i>	<i>zou</i>	<i>zouden</i>		will

13 Note that *glimlachen* (to smile) is weak, i.e. *glimlachte*, *geglímlacht*.

14 See p. 137.

15 See p. 147.

11.4 Mixed verbs

1 Mixed is the name given to those verbs which for historical reasons have a weak imperfect and a strong past participle (or occasionally vice-versa)

bakken (to bake) *bakte, bakten, gebakken*

For a complete list of such verbs see p. 134.

2 There are five verbs, *delven* (to dig), *raden* (to guess, advise), *stoten* (to push), *wassen* (to wash) and *zweren* (to fester), which have a strong imperfect which is now archaic (see p. 134).

<i>dolf</i>	<i>dolven</i>
<i>ried</i>	<i>rieden</i>
<i>stiet</i>	<i>stieten</i>
<i>wies</i>	<i>wiesen</i>
<i>zwoor</i>	<i>zworen</i>

Also *verschuilen* (to hide) but its strong imperfect is not archaic.

3 *Jagen* (to hunt, chase) and *waaien* (to blow, as of the wind) and *vragen* (to ask) are exceptional mixed verbs as they all have a strong imperfect and a weak past participle. *Jagen* and *waaien* also have a weak imperfect.

<i>jagen</i>	<i>joeg/joegen, jaagde/jaagden</i>	<i>gejaagd</i>
<i>waaien</i>	<i>woei/woeiden, waaide/waaiden</i>	<i>gewaaid</i>
<i>vragen</i>	<i>vroeg/vroegen</i>	<i>gevraagd</i>

It should be noted, however, that as with 'scheren', there is a difference in meaning between the weak and strong imperfects of *jagen*:
joeg/jagen = chased (away); *jaagde/jaagden* = hunted

11.5 Irregular verbs

Colloquially the term 'irregular' is used as a synonym for 'strong' with reference to verbs. Strictly speaking, however, irregular verbs are those that show irregularities that do not follow any of the seven basic patterns of strong verbs.

There are three groups of irregular verbs:

1 those that are historically weak verbs that all show a change of vowel in the past tenses, which they have in common with strong verbs, and also a dental ending, which they have in common with weak verbs. There are only six such verbs, two of which are not used in the spoken language, i.e. *dunken* and *plegen* (see p. 135). All derivatives of these verbs have the same irregularities, eg. *verkopen* (to sell), *verzoecken* (to request).

There is also a verb *plegen* which means 'to commit' but it is a regular verb, i.e. *pleegde, gepleegd*.

2 there are five monosyllabic verbs that belong historically to one of the seven groups of strong verbs (except *doen*), but which show certain peculiarities other strong verbs don't. (see p. 114, 135)

3 there are a few isolated verbs that follow no particular pattern at all. (see p. 115) *Zeggen* has a singular form *zeide* which is occasionally found in literature. Compounds of *zeggen* are regular, however.

<i>ontzeggen</i> (to deny)	<i>ontzegde</i>
<i>opzeggen</i> (to recite; cancel)	<i>zegde ... op</i>

11.6 Hebben – to have

11.6.1 FORMS OF *HEBBEN*

The verb *hebben* shows several irregularities that the other irregular and strong verbs don't.

Present tense:	<i>ik heb</i>	<i>wij hebben</i>
	<i>jij hebt</i>	<i>jullie hebben, hebt</i>
	<i>u hebt, heeft</i>	<i>u hebt, heeft</i>
	<i>hij heeft</i>	<i>zij hebben</i>

The *gij* form is *hebt*.

As with *zijn*, *u* can take a second or third person verb; both are equally common. *Jullie hebben* is more common than *jullie hebt*.

Imperfect tense:	singular: <i>had</i>	plural: <i>hadden</i>
Perfect tense:	<i>ik heb gehad etc.</i>	– I have had
Pluperfect tense:	<i>ik had gehad</i>	– I had had
Future tense:	<i>ik zal hebben</i>	– I will have

Future perfect tense:	<i>ik zal gehad hebben</i> – I will have had
Conditional tense:	<i>ik zou hebben</i> – I would have (or contracted to <i>ik had</i> , see p. 124)
Conditional perfect tense:	<i>ik zou gehad hebben</i> – I would have had (or contracted to <i>ik had gehad</i> , see p. 121)
Imperative:	<i>heb!</i> The imperative forms <i>hebt u</i> and <i>hebben jullie</i> exist but are not common, as indeed is the imperative of <i>hebben</i> as a whole.
Subjunctive:	the third person of the present subjunctive occurs in certain standard expressions, eg. <i>God hebbe zijn ziel</i> . – (May) God rest his soul. Occasionally in literature the past subjunctive is also met – <i>hadde</i> .

11.6.2 USES OF *HEBBEN*

- 1 For *hebben* as an auxiliary verb in perfect tenses see p. 117, 140.
- 2 The following expressions employ the verb 'to be' in English but *hebben* in Dutch.

<i>dienst hebben</i>	to be on duty	
<i>dorst hebben</i>	to be thirsty	
<i>(on)gelijk hebben</i>	to be (wrong) right	
<i>geluk hebben</i>	to be in luck	
<i>haast hebben</i>	to be in a hurry	(see p. 242)
<i>honger hebben</i>	to be hungry	
<i>pech hebben</i>	to be unlucky	
<i>slaap hebben</i>	to be sleepy	
<i>vakantie hebben</i>	to be on holidays	
<i>vrij hebben</i>	to be off (from work)	

Note: to be very hungry etc. – *erge honger hebben*
to be not hungry etc. – *geen honger hebben*

The following *hebben* constructions which employ 'to be' in English contain an idiomatic *het* which is usually written 't. They are only used with personal subjects,

Note: *ik heb het druk* but *het is erg druk*.

<i>'t benauwd hebben</i>	to feel off
<i>'t druk hebben</i>	to be busy
<i>'t koud hebben</i>	to be cold
<i>'t moeilijk hebben</i>	to be in trouble
<i>'t warm hebben</i>	to be hot
<i>'t hebben over</i>	to be talking about

11.7 *Zijn* – to be

11.7.1 FORMS OF THE VERB *ZIJN*

The verb 'to be', as in all European languages, is extremely irregular.

Present tense:	1 <i>ik ben</i> – I am	<i>wij zijn</i>
	2 <i>jij bent</i> – you are etc.	<i>jullie zijn, bent</i>
	<i>u bent, is</i>	<i>u bent</i>
	3 <i>hij is</i>	<i>zij zijn</i>

The *gij* form, which is common in Belgium, is *gij zijt*.

U can take a second or third person verb but *bent* is more common.

Jullie zijn is more common than *jullie bent*.

Imperfect tense:	1 <i>ik was</i> – I was	<i>wij waren</i>
	2 <i>jij was</i> – you were etc.	<i>jullie waren</i>
	<i>u was</i>	<i>u was</i>
	3 <i>hij was</i>	<i>zij waren</i>

The *gij* form is *waart*.

Perfect tense: the past participle is *geweest* and is formed from another infinitive *wezen* (see below). The perfect tense of *zijn* takes *zijn*.
ik ben geweest – I have been
jij bent geweest – you have been etc.

There is an adjective formed from the past participle but it is strong in form: eg. *de gewezen burgemeester* – the former mayor

Pluperfect tense:	1 <i>ik was geweest</i> – I had been
	2 <i>jij was geweest</i> – you had been etc.

Future tense:	1 <i>ik zal zijn</i> – I will be
	2 <i>jij zult zijn</i> – you will be etc.

Future perfect tense:	1 <i>ik zal geweest zijn</i> – I will have been
	2 <i>jij zult geweest zijn</i> – you will have been etc.

Conditional tense:	1 <i>ik zou zijn</i> (or contracted to <i>ik was</i> , see p. 124) – I would be	
	2 <i>jij zou zijn</i> (or contracted to <i>jij was</i>) – you would be etc.	
	<i>hij zou rijk zijn als hij gewerkt had</i>	he would be rich if
	<i>hij was rijk als hij gewerkt had</i>	he had worked

- Conditional perfect tense: 1 *ik zou geweest zijn* (or contracted to *ik was geweest*)
 – I would have been
 2 *jij zou geweest zijn* (or contracted to *jij was geweest*)
 – you would have been etc.

Note: One often hears *dat had leuk geweest* but in such cases the conditional perfect of *kunnen* is actually implied, i.e. *dat had leuk kunnen zijn*.

Imperative: in the imperative a derivative of the second infinitive *wezen* is used as for the past participle and the imperfect. *wees!* – for all persons
 the forms *weest u*, *wezen jullie* are also commonly found.

Subjunctive: subjunctive forms of 'to be' are still found in some standard expressions:
God zij dank! – Thank God!
als het ware – as it were

Notes on *wezen*

Wezen, which was originally a synonym of *zijn*, is used nowadays (other than in the imperative as described above) in two ways:

to replace *zijn* when the latter stands in the infinitive

het zou erg leuk kunnen wezen – it could be really nice
weg wezen – be off with you

to replace *zijn* in double infinitive constructions (i.e. functions in fact as a past participle). (see p. 156)

ik ben wezen kijken – I have been to look
hij is wezen vissen – he has been fishing

This is the only legitimate use of *wezen* and it cannot be replaced by *zijn* in such cases.

11.7.2 USES OF THE VERB *ZIJN*

Zijn as an auxiliary verb in compound tenses

Many verbs in Dutch, unlike in English, employ the verb 'to be' as the auxiliary in compound tenses:

I have bought a car. *Ik heb een auto gekocht.*

but

He has gone home. *Hij is naar huis gegaan.*

They had fallen over. *Ze waren omgevallen.*

Verbs that denote a change from one position or state to another belong to this category.

komen (to come), *vallen* (to fall), *stijgen* (to rise)

denote a motion from one point to another.

worden (to become), *sterven* (to die), *groeien* (to grow)

denote a change from one state to another.

It is not always immediately evident, however, that the verbs concerned imply a change of position or state.

The verbs in this group are all intransitive (for exceptions see p. 143, 144).

Both weak and strong verbs can be conjugated with *zijn*. This raises another problem: most Dutch-English dictionaries and grammars will indicate in the list of strong verbs (see p. 128) whether those verbs take *zijn* in their compound tenses, but as weak verbs are never listed, those weak verbs that take *zijn* are more difficult to isolate and learn. For this reason the list given below is incomplete.

11.8.1 The following verbs always take *zijn* in the perfect, pluperfect, future perfect and conditional perfect tenses:

vallen (to fall)

perfect : I have fallen – *ik ben gevallen*

pluperfect : I had fallen – *ik was gevallen*

future perfect : I will have fallen – *ik zal gevallen zijn*

conditional perfect : I would have fallen – *ik zou gevallen zijn/ik was gevallen*

It is impossible to give a complete list but the following will suffice to give an indication of the sort of verb that takes *zijn*:

<i>barsten</i>	to burst	<i>stappen</i> (in-, uit-, over-)	to step (get in, out etc.)
<i>beginnen</i> ¹⁶	to start	<i>sterven</i>	to die
<i>blijken</i>	to appear	<i>stijgen</i> ¹⁷	to rise
<i>blijven</i>	to remain, stay	<i>stoppen</i>	to stop
<i>dalen</i>	to descend	<i>treden</i> ¹⁷	to tread
<i>doorschieten</i>	to go to seed	<i>uitslapen</i> ¹⁸	to sleep in
<i>emigreren</i>	to emigrate	<i>vallen</i>	to fall
<i>gaan</i> ¹⁷	to go	<i>verbleken</i> ¹⁹	to turn pale
<i>gebeuren</i>	to happen	<i>verdorren</i> ¹⁹	to wither
<i>geschieden</i>	to happen	<i>verdwijnen</i> ¹⁹	to disappear
<i>groeien</i>	to grow	<i>verkleuren</i> ¹⁹	to change colour
<i>immigreren</i>	to immigrate	<i>verouderen</i> ¹⁹	to get old
<i>komen</i> ¹⁷	to come	<i>verschieten</i>	to fade, run (colours)
<i>krimpen</i>	to shrink	<i>verschijnen</i>	to appear
<i>(mis)lukken</i>	to succeed (fail)	<i>verslijken</i>	to silt up
<i>ontsnappen</i>	to escape	<i>vertrekken</i>	to leave, depart
<i>ontstaan</i>	to originate	<i>verwelken</i> ¹⁹	to wither
<i>ophouden</i>	to stop	<i>(uit)wijken</i>	to give way to
<i>opstaan</i> ¹⁷	to get up, stand up	<i>worden</i>	to become
<i>overlijden</i>	to pass away	<i>zakken</i>	to fail (exams)
<i>rijzen</i>	to rise	<i>zijn</i>	to be
<i>slagen</i>	to pass (exams), succeed	<i>zinken</i>	to sink
<i>spruiten</i>	to sprout	<i>zwellen</i>	to swell

Footnotes

16 There are just a few transitive verbs that use *zijn*:

beginnen (see p. 155), which often turns the direct object into an indirect object by the use of a preposition, however.

Hij is een zaak in de stad begonnen.

He's started a business in town.

Zij is al aan (met) haar huiswerk begonnen.

She's already started her homework.

Ik ben er al aan (mee) begonnen.

I've already started it.

tegenkomen (to bump into s.o.)

Ik ben hem op straat tegengekomen.

The verbs *aankomen* and *afvallen* (to gain and lose weight) take *zijn* although they seem to be used transitively in expressions such as *ze is twee kilo afgevallen* – 'she has lost 2 kilos'. For other transitive verbs using *zijn* see p. 145.

11.8.2 There is also a group of verbs that can take either *hebben* or *zijn* as the auxiliary in the perfect tenses. There are four categories of such verbs.

1 The following verbs are conjugated with *zijn* if a motion to or from a particular place is mentioned (in which case they do not differ from the verbs in group I); if, however, there is no motion but merely an action, they are conjugated with *hebben*.

<i>fietsen</i>	– to cycle	<i>reizen</i>	– to travel
<i>glijden</i>	– to slide	<i>rijden</i> *	– to drive, ride
<i>klimmen</i>	– to climb	<i>roeien</i> *	– to row
<i>kruipen</i>	– to crawl	<i>springen</i>	– to jump
<i>lopen</i>	– to walk	<i>trappen</i>	– to pedal, tread
<i>rennen</i>	– to run	<i>varen</i> *	– to go (by sea)
<i>hollen</i>	– to run	<i>vliegen</i> *	– to fly
<i>oversteken</i>	– to cross	<i>zeilen</i>	– to sail
		<i>zwemmen</i>	– to swim

17 Many derivatives of these and other verbs also take *zijn*, eg. *ondergaan* (to set of the sun), *vergaan* (to pass), *binnenkomen* (to come in), *opvallen* (to strike). However, not all derivatives do: sometimes the prefixes make transitive verbs of these otherwise intransitive verbs and then *hebben* is used, eg. *ondergaan* (to undergo), *nagaan* (to check, trace), *voorkomen* (to prevent), *betreden* (to tread on), *bestijgen* (to ascend the throne). On the other hand there are sometimes derivatives that take *zijn* when the root verb in its literal sense does not,

opstaan (to get up) – *ik ben opgestaan* but *staan* (to stand) – *ik heb twee uur gestaan*
afbranden (to burn down) – *het huis is afgebrand* but *branden* (to burn, intransitive) –
het huis heeft urenlang gebrand
dichtvriezen (to freeze up) – *de rivier is dichtgevroren* but *vriezen* (to freeze) – *het heeft gevoren*.

18 Many Dutch verbs can take the prefix *uit-* giving the meaning 'to be finished doing'. These compound verbs all take *zijn* even if the verbs from which they are formed do not:

uitslapen – to sleep in, have one's fill of sleep

uitpraten – to finish saying what one has to say

uitkijken – to finish looking

Ik was nog niet uitgepraat of hij begon al te zingen.

I had hardly finished talking before he began to sing.

Ben je al uitgekeken? – Have you seen enough/finished looking?

19 The prefix *ver-* basically means 'change' (see p. 184) and thus many *ver-* verbs are found in this group; not all *ver-* verbs belong here, however, as many are transitive, eg. *verstaan* (to understand), *vertalen* (to translate, i.e. to change from one language to another).

<i>lopen</i> (to run)	<i>hij is naar huis gelopen</i>
	<i>hij heeft de hele dag gelopen</i>
<i>rijden</i> (to drive)	<i>ik ben in drie kwartier naar Rotterdam gereden</i>
	<i>ik heb vandaag erg veel gereden</i>
<i>zwemmen</i> (to swim)	<i>gisteren is er een Engelsman van Calais naar Dover gezwommen</i>
	<i>heb je ooit in de Oostzee gezwommen?</i>

2 Some of the verbs mentioned above can also be used transitively, in which case they take *hebben*, as do all transitive verbs. They are marked *.

rijden: *Heb je ooit een Mercedes gereden?*

roeien: *Ik heb hem naar de overkant van de rivier geroeid.*

3 There is in addition a small group of verbs that take *zijn* when used intransitively, but *hebben* when used transitively. They have nothing to do with motion like those in (2), however.

<i>bederven</i> (to spoil)
<i>breken</i> (to break)
<i>genezen</i> (to heal, cure)
<i>ontdooien</i> (to defrost)
<i>smelten</i> (to melt)
<i>veranderen</i> (to change)

Het is bedorven.

Jij hebt het bedorven.

De stoel is gebroken.

Jij hebt hem gebroken.

De wond is genezen.

De dokter heeft me genezen.

De kip is ontdooid.

Ik heb de kip ontdooid.

De boter is gesmolten.

Jij hebt hem in de pan gesmolten.

Het weer is veranderd.

Ik heb het veranderd.

It has spoiled.

You've spoilt it.

The chair has broken.

You broke it.

The wound has healed.

The doctor (has) cured me.

The chicken has defrosted.

I have defrosted the chicken.

The butter has melted.

You melted it in the pot.

The weather has changed.

I altered it.

It should be noted that when such verbs are used intransitively in Dutch they are conjugated with *zijn*. The past participles are not to be distinguished from predicative adjectives.

4 The verbs dealt with here can be conjugated with *zijn* or *hebben* but the criteria for their use are separate in each case:

vergeten (to forget): with *hebben* the meaning is 'did not think of it' or 'left s.t. behind'.

Ik heb vergeten te schrijven.

Ik heb mijn paraplu vergeten.

With *zijn* the meaning is 'has gone from one's memory'.

Ik ben glad vergeten waar ik het gelaten heb.

Ik ben je naam vergeten.

In practice most Dutch people use *zijn* in all cases.

verleren (to forget s.t. learnt): this verb can be conjugated with *hebben* or *zijn* with no difference in meaning.

Ik heb/ben het Frans geheel verleerd.

verliezen (to lose): should always be conjugated with *hebben* but is commonly heard with *zijn* either by analogy with *vergeten* or with *kwijt zijn*.

Ik ben mijn sleutels kwijt.

Ik heb mijn sleutels verloren.

volgen (to follow) when this verb means 'to pursue' it is conjugated with *zijn*.

De buurman is zijn hond gevolgd.

Otherwise *hebben* is used.

Ik heb colleges bij hem gevolgd.

Zij heeft de politieke ontwikkelingen in Zuid Afrika gevolgd.

The verb *opvolgen* (to succeed, follow) is found with both.

Juliana heeft/is haar moeder in 1948 opgevolgd.

Note: Because only one auxiliary (i.e. have) is used in the perfect and pluperfect tenses in English one can often have several past participles following, all dependent on the one 'have'. In Dutch this is only possible if both past participles require *hebben*; the auxiliary must be repeated if one requires *hebben* and the other *zijn*,

He has hired a plane and flown to Russia.

Hij heeft een vliegtuig gehuurd en is naar Rusland gevlogen.

Alternative translations of 'to be':

Very often the English verb 'to be', when indicating the position of something, is

rendered in Dutch by the verbs *hangen* (to hang), *liggen* (to lie), *lopen* (to run), *staan* (to stand) and *zitten* (to sit). They are usually found in repletive *er* constructions (see p. 235).

There are many trees here.	<i>Er staan hier veel bomen.</i>
Behind our house is a canal.	<i>Achter ons huis loopt een gracht.</i>
There is a picture on the wall.	<i>Er hangt een schilderij aan de muur.</i>
What is in that glass?	<i>Wat zit er in dat glas?</i>

11.9 Modal auxiliary verbs (*modale hulpwerkwoorden*)

Modal verbs form a special class of their own because they show a variety of irregular forms and, due to their auxiliary nature in expressing mood, also a variety of meanings. There are four true modals (*kunnen*, *moeten*, *mogen*, *willen*) plus the verbs *durven*, *hoeven*, and *zullen* which share one or more modal characteristics.

One feature common to both Dutch and English modals is the lack of a *te* before the infinitive for which it is acting as an auxiliary,
eg. he can do it – *hij kan het doen*.

11.9.1 FORMS

1 *kunnen* (to be able to, can)

present:

1. <i>ik kan</i> = I am able, can	<i>wij kunnen</i>
2. <i>jij kunt, kan</i> <i>u kunt</i>	<i>jullie kunnen, kunt</i> <i>u kunt</i>
3. <i>hij kan</i>	<i>zij kunnen</i>

Jij can take either *kunt* or *kan* and both are equally common; when inverted, *jij kunt* becomes *kun jij*.

Jullie kunnen is more common than *jullie kunt*.

imperfect:

ik, jij, u, hij kon = I was able, could
wij, jullie, zij konden

past participle:

gekund (see Perfect tenses of modal verbs, p. 149)

2 *moeten* (to have to, must)

For the negative of *moeten* using *hoeven* see p. 151.

present:

1. <i>ik moet</i> = I have to, must	<i>wij moeten</i>
2. <i>jij, u moet</i>	<i>jullie moeten, moet</i>
3. <i>hij moet</i>	<i>zij moeten</i>

Jullie moet is not common.

imperfect:

ik, jij, u, hij moest = I had to
wij, jullie, zij moesten

past participle:

gemoeten (see Perfect tenses of modal verbs, p. 148)

3 *mogen* (to be allowed to, may)

present:

1. <i>ik mag</i> = I am allowed, may	<i>wij mogen</i>
2. <i>jij, u mag</i>	<i>jullie mogen, mag</i>
3. <i>hij mag</i>	<i>zij mogen</i>

Jullie mag is not common. The *gij* form is *moogt*.

imperfect:

ik, jij, u, hij mocht = I was allowed to
wij, jullie, zij mochten

past participle:

One finds *gemogen*, *gemocht* and *gemoogd*, but in practice most people say *gemogen*. (see Perfect tenses of modal verbs, p. 148)

4 *willen* (to want to)

present:

1. <i>ik wil</i>	<i>wij willen</i>
2. <i>jij wilt, wil</i> <i>u wilt</i>	<i>jullie willen, wilt</i> <i>u wilt</i>
3. <i>hij wil</i>	<i>zij willen</i>

Jij can take either *wilt* or *wil* and both are equally common; when inverted *jij wilt* becomes *wil jij*.

Jullie wilt is not common.

imperfect:

ik, jij, u, hij wilde, wou

wij, jullie, zij wilden

One often hears a plural form *wouwen* but this is never written and should be avoided in more careful speech; the singular form *wou* is permissible in both writing and speech, however. (see also Contracted modals in conditional tenses, p. 149)

past participle:

gewild (see 'Perfect tenses of modal verbs' below)

11.9.2 PERFECT TENSES OF MODAL VERBS

The past participle of modal verbs is not often used. Because of the auxiliary function of modals a perfect tense (including pluperfects, future perfects and conditional perfects) is usually followed by another infinitive and in this case the so-called 'double infinitive rule' applies, i.e. if one has an English sentence where the past participle of a modal verb is followed by an infinitive, Dutch does not use the past participle but the infinitive of the modal concerned. (see also p. 156)

I have not been able to visit him.	<i>Ik heb hem niet kunnen bezoeken.</i>
They had been allowed to go.	<i>Ze hadden mogen gaan.</i>
She will have had to spend it.	<i>Zij zal het hebben moeten uitgeven.</i>

Only when the infinitive for which the modal is acting as auxiliary is not mentioned (but simply implied), is the past participle used.

<i>Ik heb het niet gekund.</i>	I have not been able (to see him).
<i>Zij hadden het gemogen.</i>	They had been allowed to (go).
<i>Zij zal het hebben gemoeten.</i>	She will have had to (spend it).

Note the use of *het* in such cases.

The following is commonly done by Dutch people with the perfect tense of modals: modals all take *hebben* as their auxiliary verb in the perfect tense but the speaker is often misled by the infinitive that follows the perfect of the modal,

hij is niet kunnen komen.

Here he anticipates the verb of motion which follows the modal and which requires *zijn* in its perfect tense, but in actual fact it is the perfect of *kunnen* which is required

here and *kunnen* requires *hebben*, eg. *hij heeft niet kunnen komen*. Similarly *hij is weggemoeten*, which is an abbreviated form of *hij heeft moeten weggaan* where *gaan* is not mentioned but simply implied. (see also p. 150)

11.9.3 CONTRACTED MODALS IN CONDITIONAL TENSES

1 Conditional tense:

The modal auxiliary verbs have in common with the auxiliaries *hebben* and *zijn* the fact that they know contracted forms in the conditional. In the case of the conditional the concept is not unknown in English either: for example 'I could do it' can mean either 'I was able to do it' (an imperfect) or 'I would be able to do it' (a conditional).

Kunnen

Similarly the Dutch sentence *ik kon het doen* is ambiguous without a context and in the latter meaning it replaces *ik zou het kunnen doen*, where *kon* is the contracted form of *zou kunnen*. Either form is permissible but the latter avoids any ambiguity.

Moeten

In the same way, *moest*, *moesten* can mean 'should, ought to' as well as 'had to', eg. *je moest meer eten* – you should eat more. *Jij zou meer moeten eten* is equally correct and preferable if ambiguity is likely.

Willen

It has a contracted form too which means 'would like to, want to' and which is also identical to the past tense.

ik wou graag twee kilo appels (hebben) =
Ik zou graag twee kilo appels willen (hebben).

The adverb *graag* is commonly used in such 'would like' constructions.

Note the following use of *wou*: *ik wou dat ik rijk was* – I wish I were rich.

Wilde(n) can never be used in this conditional sense.

Mogen

Knows one contraction in the conditional which is rather formal style and which is translated by 'should' in English.

Mocht het regenen, dan komen we niet.
Should it rain, we won't be coming.

2 Conditional perfect of *kunnen* and *moeten*: (see also p. 164)

Kunnen

The English phrase 'could have done' is a contraction of 'would have been able to do' and as such can be rendered in Dutch by *hij zou het hebben kunnen doen* but the following contracted form is more commonly used: *hij had het kunnen doen* (for contraction of *zou...hebben* to *had/hadden*, see p. 121).

It is best to learn *had/hadden kunnen doen* parrot-fashion and to apply it as follows: she could have sung the song better – *zij had het liedje beter kunnen zingen*.

Moeten

The construction 'should have done' is similar to the above but is difficult to rephrase sensibly in 'would' terms in English. In this case it is definitely advisable to learn *had/hadden moeten doen* parrot-fashion and to apply it as follows: The gentlemen should have read the news-paper – *De heren hadden de krant moeten lezen*.

Note that the contracted conditional perfect forms *had kunnen doen* and *had moeten doen* are identical to the pluperfect (as a result of the double infinitive rule, see p. 156), but context always makes the meaning clear.

Als ik het had moeten doen, zou ik geweigerd hebben.

If I had had to do it, I would have refused. (pluperfect)

Ik had het moeten doen maar ik had er geen zin in.

I should have done it but I didn't feel like it. (conditional perfect)

11.9.4 USE OF INDEPENDENT MODALS

There is one use of modals which differs considerably from English: *kunnen*, *moeten*, *mogen* and *willen* often stand alone and the verb that follows in English is simply implied in Dutch; this is particularly the case when the implied verbs are *doen*, *gaan*, *komen*, *hebben* and *worden*.

Ik kan het niet niet.

Dat moet.

Je mag naar binnen.

Hij zou het niet willen.

Kan dat?

Mag dat?

Dat moet!

I can't do it.

That must be done.

You may go inside.

He wouldn't want to do (or to have) it.

Is that possible?

Is that allowed?

That must be done.

11.9.5 SEMANTIC DIFFICULTIES WITH MODALS

1 **Kunnen**

a As in English, *kunnen* (can) and *mogen* (may) are often confused, eg. 'Can I borrow your bicycle?' should actually read 'May I borrow your bicycle?' but in practice the semantic distinction between the two is ignored; in Dutch too *Kan ik je fiets even lenen?* will often be heard for *Mag ik je fiets even lenen?*

In addition English 'may' is often rendered by *kunnen* in Dutch:

That may be true.

Dat kan wel waar zijn.

The king may come at any moment.

De koning kan elk ogenblik komen.

b *Kunnen* is commonly used in polite requests:

Kunt u het raam even dichtdoen?/Zou u het raam even dicht kunnen doen?

c *Kunnen* + *beter* renders English 'had better':

You had better not buy a car.

Je kan beter geen auto kopen.

d A conditional of *kunnen* is often used to render 'might' (see p. 153).

2 **Moeten**

a *Moeten* has two meanings:

1. to be obliged to, have to

2. to be advised to

Je moet je vader helpen.

You must (are obliged to) help your father.

You must (i.e. I advise you to) help your father.

English has the same ambiguity. When the above English examples are negated, the following occurs:

meaning 1: You don't have to help your father.

meaning 2: You mustn't help your father.

Similarly in Dutch a different verb is used to negate the former:

meaning 1: *Je hoeft je vader niet te helpen.*

meaning 2: *Je moet je vader niet helpen.*

Hoeven is a semi-modal verb; it replaces *moeten* in the above sense; it can be used independently like *moeten*, eg. *dat hoeft niet* – that's not necessary; but there are cases when it must be followed by *te* (an unmodal trait) and others where one has

the option, i.e. *te* is always used in the present and imperfect tenses but may be omitted in compound tenses where double infinitive constructions occur,

Dat zul je nooit hoeven (te) doen.

Dat heeft hij nooit hoeven (te) doen.

Note the following use with the negative conjunction *zonder*: *Zonder iets voor me te hoeven doen, heeft hij zijn diensten aangeboden.* – Without having to do anything for me, he offered his services.

b 'Should, ought to' are expressed by *moeten* in Dutch.

Note: not, however, 'should' which means 'would', i.e. I should do it, if I were you – *ik zou het doen als ik jou was.*

Although the contracted conditional form *moest(en)* (see 11.9.3) is often used in this sense, the present tense is also very common and is certainly simpler.

You should write more often.

Je moet (moest) vaker schrijven.

That should be forbidden.

Dat moet (moest) verboden worden.

c In formal style the verbs *dienen* and *(be)horen* often replace *moeten* in the sense of 'to be obliged to'. They are always followed by *te*,

Alle passagiers dienen zich vóór acht uur bij loket vier te melden.

Bestellingen (be)horen vóór 31 januari te worden geplaatst.

3 Mogen

a In addition to the basic meaning of 'to be allowed to', *mogen* also renders the verb 'to like' (of people), eg. *Ik mag hem graag* – I like him a lot, as distinct from *ik hou van hem* – I love him; otherwise one must say *ik vind hem aardig* to express 'to like'.

b There is a *mogen* commonly used with the adverb *wel eens* which means 'could, would be better if',

Je mag je kamer wel eens opruimen.

You could tidy up your room (to begin with).

Hij mag zich wel eens verkleden.

He could change his clothes (for once).

c There is an obsolete first person present tense form of *mogen* that is sometimes used in formal letters (see also p. 160):

Naar aanleiding van uw schrijven van 21 december jl. moge ik u mededelen dat...

With reference to your letter of the 21st December last I would like to inform you that...

d English 'might', a form derived from 'may', is usually expressed in Dutch simply by the addition of *misschien* (perhaps) to the sentence, but the conditional of *kunnen* is also possible.

He might come tomorrow.

Hij komt misschien morgen./Hij zou morgen kunnen komen.

That might be difficult.

Dat zal misschien moeilijk zijn./Dat zou moeilijk kunnen zijn.

'Might' in the following example is semantically different, however, and *misschien* cannot be used: He might have asked me if I wanted it – i.e. he could have asked, thus *hij had mij kunnen vragen of ik het hebben wilde.*

4 Willen

a In addition to the meaning 'want', the Dutch verb *willen* also often renders English 'will'; in such cases no futurity is expressed but a polite imperative (also English 'would you mind...').

Will you please shut the window.

Wilt u het raam even dichtdoen.

b English 'would like' is expressed by the conditional of *willen* (see p. 149),

I would like a cup of tea.

Ik zou graag een kopje thee willen hebben./Ik wou graag een kopje thee.

5 Zullen

In addition to being the auxiliary used to form the future tense, *zullen* can also have other connotations.

Zullen we gaan? – Shall we go?

i.e. *Laten we gaan.* – Let's go.

It also renders biblical 'shall' (i.e. must).

Gij zult niet stelen. – Thou shalt not steal.

The idiom *dat zal wel* (that's probably so) is very common. (see p. 124)

11.10 The infinitive (*de onbepaalde wijs*)

11.10.1 CHARACTERISTICS OF THE INFINITIVE

The infinitive or basic undeclined form of the verb always ends in *-en* in Dutch,

lopen (to run), *jagen* (to hunt) etc.

There are six monosyllabic verbs ending in *-n* in the infinitive.

doen, gaan, slaan, staan, zien, zijn

English always puts 'to' before the infinitive in isolation. One should learn each new verb as follows: *lopen* = to run. In context, however, there are occasions when this 'to' may or may not be used. Similarly in Dutch, although the infinitive in isolation is never preceded by *te*, in context there are rules for when it is and is not used.

11.10.2 RULES FOR THE USE OF *TE*

As a general rule one can say that an infinitive at the end of a clause is always preceded by *te* except in the following cases:

- 1 When the infinitive is used as a general impersonal imperative (see p. 159),

niet roken, geen lawaai maken, niet zo langzaam lopen.

- 2 It is never used after modal verbs, i.e. when a modal is the finite verb in the clause. Dutch shares this feature with English.

Hij kan het niet doen.

He can't do it./He isn't able to do it.

Wij hebben tien boeken moeten lezen.

We had to read ten books.

Note the English modal 'to want to', where a 'to' is used (compare 'to be able to' and 'to have to' above), unlike Dutch.

He wants to go. – *Hij wil gaan.*

- 3 The auxiliary *hoeven* which is used to form the negative of *moeten* is commonly followed by *te*, unlike the modals. (see p. 151)

- 4 The verbs *durven* (to dare), *staan* (to stand), *liggen* (to lie) and *zitten* (to sit) behave in a similar way to *hoeven*:

Durf je dat te doen?

Do you dare (to) say that?

Dat heb ik nooit durven (te) zeggen.

I never dared (to) say that.

Hij zit een boek te lezen.

He's sitting reading a book.

Hij heeft de hele dag een boek zitten lezen.

He has been (sitting) reading a book all day.

Zij stond naar een koe te kijken.

She stood looking at a cow.

Ze kan urenlang naar koeien staan kijken.

She can stand looking at cows for hours.

(see p. 165)

The verbs *proberen* and *trachten* (to try) know a double infinitive construction like that of the above verbs but it is always followed by *te*:

Hij probeerde mij te helpen.

He tried to help me.

Hij heeft mij proberen te helpen./Hij heeft geprobeerd mij te helpen.

He (has) tried to help me.

The verb *beginnen*, when used in the perfect tense and followed by another infinitive, usually follows the regular pattern of past participle + *te* + infinitive but it can also follow the same pattern as *proberen*, using the infinitive instead of the past participle:

Toen is het kind begonnen te schreeuwen./

Toen is het kind beginnen te schreeuwen.

Then the child started to scream.

Hij is begonnen een brief te schrijven./

Hij is een brief beginnen te schrijven.

He began to write a letter.

Similarly the verb *weten* which literally means 'to know' but renders English 'to manage to' in such constructions:

Hij wist te ontsnappen.

He managed to escape.

Hij heeft het weten te vinden.

He (has) managed to find it.

Note: Often *zijn* is used colloquially with this *weten* in the perfect tense when the following infinitive is a verb of motion (the same often occurs with modals in the perfect tense, see p. 148)

Hij is weten te ontsnappen.

- 5 a When the following verbs are used as finite verbs and are followed by an infinitive, the infinitive is not preceded by *te*:

komen

zien

doen

gaan

leren

blijven

horen

helpen

zijn

vinden

laten

hebben

voelen

leren

Zij hoorde mij komen.

She heard me coming.

Ik vond hem bij het raam staan.

I found him standing by the window.

b All these verbs (except *hebben*, see p. 170) employ a double infinitive construction in the perfect tense, i.e. they use an infinitive, not a past participle when followed by another infinitive (see also Perfect tenses of modal verbs, p. 148). Such constructions are very common because of the tendency in Dutch to use the perfect tense instead of the imperfect – see the translations of the following examples:

Ik heb hem horen komen.

I heard him coming.

Hij is gaan kijken.

He has gone (went) to look.

Note: Use of *zijn* – perfect tense of *gaan*, a verb of motion.

Hij heeft zijn hart voelen kloppen.

He felt his heart beating.

Ik heb mijn zoontje leren zwemmen.

I taught my son to swim.

De aardappels hebben koud staan worden.

The potatoes have been getting cold.

Hij heeft zijn handen leren gebruiken.

He has learnt to use his hands.

Hij is blijven doorpraten.

He went on talking.

Note: *zijn* has a special alternative infinitive used only in such double infinitive constructions:

Ze zijn wezen kijken.

They have been to have a look.

See p. 140.

c *Laten* in such constructions is often rendered by a passive in English:

Hij heeft een huis laten bouwen.

He has had built a house.

Ik heb mijn haar laten knippen.

I (have) had my hair cut.

Doen often replaces *laten* in more formal style:

De regering heeft het parlamentsgebouw doen ontruimen.

The government (has) had parliament house evacuated.

d There are some pairs of infinitives incorporating the above verbs which render a new concept in English:

blijven zitten – to fail, stay down (at school)

gaan zitten – to sit down

blijven staan – to stop still

doen denken – to remind (someone of something)

e Note the following idiomatic use of *hebben* which requires no *te* before the infinitive that follows it:

Ik heb een tante in Friesland zitten.

I have an aunt living in Friesland.

Zij heeft een prachtige lamp in de hoek staan.

She has a beautiful lamp standing in the corner.

11.10.3 USE OF *OM... TE* BEFORE INFINITIVES

This is a complicated issue in Dutch and seems to be in the process of changing. There are a few instances where only *te* can be used (see 11.10.2) and a few cases where only *om... te* can be used:

1 When English 'to' means 'in order to' (compare the poetic form 'for to cross the road'),

Ik ga naar de stad om een hoed te kopen.

I am going to town to buy a hat.

Het is niet nodig (om) de weg over te steken om bij de winkels te komen.

It is not necessary to cross the road to reach the shops.

2 When a sentence begins with the infinitive clause:

Om te besluiten zou ik... – To finish, I would...

3 When the infinitive construction follows a noun that it is describing; in such cases *om* is always followed by a preposition:

Een pad om op te fietsen.

A path to ride on.

Een surf-boot is een boot om mee door de branding te gaan.

A surf-boat is a boat to go through the surf with.

Nieuwe huizen zijn niet prettig om in te wonen.

New houses are not nice to live in.

Ik heb al mijn kinderen om voor te zorgen.

I have all my children to look after.

In all other cases the use of *te* or *om... te* is optional but nowadays there is a tendency to include *om* wherever possible.

*Ze weigerde (om) mee te gaan.*²⁰

She refused to go along.

Het is daar niet (om) uit te houden.

It is impossible to tolerate there.

Het is stom (om) een oude auto te kopen.

It is stupid to buy an old car.

Ik ben vergeten (om) te vragen.

I forgot to ask.

Zij was van plan (om) een uitstapje naar Marken te maken.

She intended making a trip to Marken.

Dat is niet (om) te doen.

That can't be done.

11.10.4 THE INFINITIVE AS A NOUN

The infinitive is also used as a neuter noun:

blaffen – to bark, thus *het blaffen* – the barking

behangen – to wallpaper, thus *het behangen* – the wallpapering

Ik ben tegen het roken.

I am against smoking.

Het uit je hoofd leren van werkwoorden valt tegen.

Learning verbs by heart isn't easy.

Vermijd het te veel drinken van wodka als je in Rusland bent.

Avoid drinking too much vodka when you're in Russia.

11.11 The imperative mood (*de gebiedende wijs*)

11.11.1 As the imperative is an order form addressed to a second person there is a *jij, jullie* and *u* form.

werk

werken jullie work!

werkt u

The form derived from the simple stem can actually be used for all persons whether singular or plural, familiar or polite.

The *u* form is used only when being particularly polite,

Komt u binnen en gaat u zitten.

The simple stem can sound a little harsh and it is often softened by the use of the adverbs *eens* or *even*.

Geef me eens (pronounced 's) *je boek.*

Maak het raam eens even dicht.

Lees dat eens even voor.

Sometimes *jij, u* or *jullie* is added for the same reason,

Ga jij nou daar zitten.

Note the following common idiomatic imperatives employing the word *ze*: *werk ze* – work hard, *slaap ze* – sleep well, *eet ze* – bon appétit.

11.11.2 In formal written style (and often in advertisements too) one meets an imperative formed from the stem + *t*, actually a plural form.

Leest de Bijbel.

11.11.3 The infinitive is also commonly used as a general hyper-impersonal imperative; this is particularly common on signs and is also used in recipes (the simple stem is common in recipes too).

signs: *niet roken* – don't smoke

voorrang verlenen – to give the right of way (i.e. in traffic)

recipes: *het vlees met kruiden inwrijven en dan twee dagen op een koele plaats laten staan.*

11.11.4 Occasionally the past participle is used as a general impersonal imperative, particularly with the verbs *opletten* and *oppassen*.

opgelet, opgepast – watch out, take care!

11.11.5 The imperative form 'let' as in 'Let's go home' etc. can be expressed in two ways in Dutch:

a either by the simple imperative formed from the stem plus the object pronoun, as in English,

Laat ons naar huis gaan; laat me het zo zeggen.

b or by using the subject pronoun and the appropriate form of the verb,

Laten we naar huis gaan; laat ik het zo zeggen.

²⁰ *te* used with a separable verb goes between the prefix and the verb and the three words are written separately.

11.12 The subjunctive mood (*de aanvoegende wijs*)

The subjunctive, which was formerly quite common in Dutch and may still be met in older literature, is not actively used any more. It has suffered the same fate in Dutch as in English; it is only preserved in certain standard expressions. As in English, it is used to express actions that are wished for, feared, doubted or are conditional on other actions.

The **present subjunctive** differs from the present indicative in that the first and third persons singular end in *-e*, eg. *ik werke, hij worde*. (*Jij*, being a familiar form, is never found with a subjunctive form.) Note that sometimes in formal letter style an archaic first person present tense form ending in *-e* is used; this should not be confused with subjunctive (see also p. 152):

*Naar aanleiding van uw brief van 21 december moge ik u mededelen...
Verblijve met de meeste hoogachting*

The **imperfect subjunctive** of weak verbs is the same as the indicative, but that of strong verbs ends in *-e* in the first and third persons singular and is otherwise the same as the imperfect indicative, eg. *ik hadde, hij kwame*.

The monosyllabic verbs *doen, gaan, slaan, staan* and *zien* add no *-e* but employ the stem only. *Zijn* has the irregular forms *zij* (first and third persons present subjunctive) and *ware* (first and third persons imperfect subjunctive).

Examples of some commonly used subjunctives:

<i>leve de koningin</i>	long live the Queen
<i>het koste wat het wil</i>	cost what it may
<i>het ga u goed</i>	may all go well for you
<i>God zij dank</i>	thanks be to God
<i>wat hij ook moge doen</i>	whatever he may do
<i>als het ware</i>	as it were

Note the final example has a parallel in English; the English imperfect subjunctive preserved in 'if I/he were rich...' no longer exists in Dutch, however, i.e. *als ik/hij rijk was...*

There is one present subjunctive that is still productive: in formal writing a third person singular subjunctive with the subject pronoun *men* renders an imperative, eg. *men lette hierop, men herleze mijn openingswoord ter gelegenheid van het derde colloquium*.

This form is commonly used in recipes.

11.13 The passive (*de lijdende vorm*)

11.13.1 THE TENSES OF THE PASSIVE

Present	: <i>Het raam wordt (door hem) gewassen.</i> The window is (being) washed (by him).
Imperfect	: <i>Het raam werd (door hem) gewassen.</i> The window was (being) washed (by him).
Perfect	: <i>Het raam is (door hem) gewassen [geworden].</i> ²¹ The window has been washed (by him).
Pluperfect	: <i>Het raam was (door hem) gewassen [geworden].</i> The window had been washed (by him).
Future	: <i>Het raam zal (door hem) gewassen worden.</i> The window will be washed (by him).
Conditional	: <i>Het raam zou (door hem) gewassen worden.</i> The window would be washed (by him).
Future perfect	: <i>Het raam zal (door hem) gewassen [geworden] zijn.</i> The window will have been washed (by him).
Conditional perfect	: <i>Het raam zou (door hem) gewassen [geworden] zijn.</i> The window would have been washed (by him).

11.13.2 WHAT IS THE PASSIVE?

The passive is a voice, not a tense, because all tenses of the active extend to the passive too. A passive construction is one where the logical object of the action becomes the subject of the finite verb, i.e.

active : he washes the window – *hij wast het raam*.

passive: the window is washed (by him) – *het raam wordt (door hem) gewassen*.

In the passive the agent of the action may be left unmentioned if so desired, but it is always implied.

21 Because of the Dutch tendency to use the perfect tense where English uses the imperfect, this can also be translated with 'was washed'.

As *zijn* is also used to form the active perfect tense of some intransitive verbs, there is no formal difference between the active perfects of those verbs and the passive perfects of all other verbs.

Hij is in Amsterdam aangekomen.
Hij is in Amsterdam gezien.

11.13.3 HOW TO CONSTRUCT THE PASSIVE

The passive is constructed in English by a form of the verb 'to be' plus a past participle plus an optional agent introduced by the preposition 'by'.

i.e. subject + to be + past participle (+ by + noun/pronoun)
 e.g. the window is being washed by him

The Dutch passive differs in that the verb *worden* is used, not *zijn*, to translate the verb 'to be' and 'by' is translated by *door*.

i.e. subject + worden (+ door + noun/pronoun) + past participle
 e.g. *het raam wordt door hem gewassen*

11.13.4 DIFFICULTIES WITH THE PASSIVE

1 Perfect and pluperfect passive

A complication arises where the auxiliary *worden* is required in the perfect tense.

i.e. the window has been washed.

Here one would expect: *het raam is gewassen geworden*
 has washed been

This double participle is not liked, however, and the Dutchman simply drops the *geworden*, claiming that if 'a window has been washed' then it 'is washed', i.e. *is gewassen*.

Similarly in the pluperfect 'the window had been washed' should be: *het raam was gewassen geworden*, but the *geworden* is dropped because if 'the window had been washed' then it 'was washed', i.e. *was gewassen*.

These two forms *is/was gewassen* lead the English speaker, however, to think that a sentence like 'the window is/was washed by him' is *het raam is/was door hem gewassen*. Be careful here. In this case the present or past of *worden* is required.

Note: The perfect tense is more common in Dutch than in English because of the tendency to render English imperfections with perfects in Dutch.

The car was washed by him yesterday.
De auto werd gisteren door hem gewassen./De auto is gisteren door hem gewassen.

2 Action versus state with the past participle

A further but related difficulty arises with a sentence like 'the door is closed'. If one

is describing an action, i.e. if the sentence is 'the door is (being) closed (by him)', then the present tense of *worden* must be used: *de deur wordt (door hem) gesloten*.

Similarly, in the past 'the door was shut'; if it means 'the door was (being) shut (by him)', it will be in Dutch *de deur werd (door hem) gesloten*.

But perhaps only a state, not an action, is implied, i.e. the door is/was closed. Here the past participle can be regarded simply as an adjective as in 'the door is/was red' and no agent is implied. If this is the case then the sentence is translated: *de deur is/was gesloten*.

We thus see that 'the door has (had) been closed' and 'the door is (was) closed' are both *de deur is (was) gesloten* and the context tells us what is intended.

3 Passives with indirect objects

A special difficulty arises in passive sentences such as the following: I was given a book (by them). If one looks firstly at the active of this sentence 'They gave a book to me' one sees that the English 'I' is an indirect object in meaning: I was not given, a book was given to me. Such indirect objects in passive sentences can be rendered in three ways in Dutch:

(Aan) mij werd een boek gegeven. (less common)

Een boek werd aan mij gegeven. (less common)

Er werd een boek aan mij gegeven./Er werd mij een boek gegeven.

The last alternative which utilizes a repletive *er* is very common in the passive in Dutch, especially when the agent is not determined.

Er werden gisteren veel ramen gewassen.

Many windows were washed yesterday.

Er moet wat gedaan worden.

Something must be done.

Er werden felicitaties aan hen gestuurd.

They were sent congratulations.

4 Use of modals with the passive

Modal verbs often act as auxiliaries in the passive too as in English and should simply be translated literally.

It must be done. — *Het moet gedaan worden.*

It couldn't be cleaned. — *Het kon niet schoongemaakt worden.*

The following modal constructions differ considerably from English, however:

That could have been done. — *Dat had gedaan kunnen worden.*
 That should have been done. — *Dat had gedaan moeten worden.*

5 Word-order with modals

In main clauses the order of the constituent parts of the passive with a modal verb can be either:

Dat kan gedaan worden./Dat kan worden gedaan.
Dat zou gedaan moeten worden./Dat zou moeten worden gedaan.

In sub-ordinate clauses the following alternatives exist (the finite verb is never placed after the verbal cluster).

Ik weet dat het gedaan kan worden./Ik weet dat het kan worden gedaan.
Hij zei dat het gedaan zou moeten worden./Hij zei dat het zou moeten worden gedaan.

6 Contracted conditionals in the passive

Contracted forms of *zijn* are common in the passive. (see p. 121)

The city would have been destroyed if...
De stad was vernietigd als.../De stad zou vernietigd zijn als...
 The book would have been read sooner if...
Het boek was eerder gelezen als.../Het boek zou eerder gelezen zijn als...

7 Passives rendered by adjectival adjuncts (see p. 67)

It is common in journalese and other written style to replace relative clauses containing a passive with adjectival adjuncts placed before the relevant noun.

Het huis dat gisteren door hem werd geverfd.
Het gisteren door hem geverfde huis.
Het bedrag dat nog door haar betaald moet worden.
Het nog door haar te betalen bedrag.

Such constructions must be translated into English with relative clauses.

8 There are some impersonal English passives which are rendered in Dutch by an infinitive construction, thus avoiding the passive.

There was nobody to be seen. *Er was niemand te zien.*
 That was to be expected. *Dat was te verwachten.*
 That is to be hoped. *Dat is te hopen.*
 Where can that book be got? *Waar is dat boek te krijgen?*

9 Use of *men/je/ze* instead of the passive

It should be noted that the passive in all its forms is more common in English than in Dutch. Very often the Dutchman uses an active form of the verb with *men* (one) or *je* (you) as its subject.

Dutch is spoken here. *Men spreekt hier Nederlands.*
 Cows can be milked by hand. *Men/je kan koeien met de hand melken.*

Men is as formal in Dutch as 'one' is in English. In everyday speech *je* (never *jij*) is used, just as in English.

English can also use a non-personal 'they' instead of the passive; Dutch knows this too and uses *ze* (never *zij*).

They say it's going to rain. (= it is said that)
Ze zeggen dat het gaat regenen.

11.14 Progressive or continuous tenses

When first learning Dutch verbs one is told that a form such as 'I am working' is *ik werk*, 'I was working' is *ik werkte* and 'I have been working' is *ik heb gewerkt*. This is indeed usually the case but there are instances where the continuous aspect needs to be expressed and there are three ways of doing so in Dutch:

11.14.1 *zijn aan 't* + infinitive:

Ik ben druk aan 't koken.
 I am busy cooking.
Ik was de hele middag aan 't timmeren.
 I was hammering away all afternoon.
Ik ben urenlang aan 't koken geweest.
 I have been cooking for hours (and have finished, see p. 121).

This is the most common way.

11.14.2 *zitten, staan, liggen* or *lopen* + *te* + infinitive:

Zij zit een boek te lezen.
 She is reading a book.
Hij stond buiten met de buurman te praten.
 He was (standing) talking to the neighbour outside.
Jantje ligt te slapen.
 Jantje is sleeping.

Note: *Zij zit een hele tijd dat boek te lezen.*
 She has been reading that book for ages. (see p. 155)

Hij heeft urenlang liggen slapen.

He was asleep for hours.

Ik heb ernaar lopen zoeken.

I have been looking for it.

This is also a very common construction.

11.14.3 *zijn bezig te* + infinitive:

Ik ben bezig een boek te schrijven.

I am (busy) writing a book.

Zij waren bezig het hele appartement te verven.

They were painting the whole flat.

This is not as common as 11.14.1 and 11.14.2.

11.15 Emphatic present and imperfect tenses formed with 'to do'

One usually learns that a form such as *ik werk* renders three English forms, i.e. I work, I am working, I do work and the imperfect *ik werkte* renders I worked, I was working, I did work. This is so, but just as the am/was working forms can be expressed in a different way in Dutch (see p. 165), so can the emphatic forms using 'do' have an equivalent in Dutch. In this case, however, the adverb *wel* can follow the verb to give it the required emphasis.

Let er wel goed op.

Do take note of it.

Ik heb het wel gedaan.

I did do it.

(the opposite of:

Ik heb het niet gedaan)

11.16 The present participle (*het tegenwoordig deelwoord*)

The present participle in Dutch is formed by adding *-d(e)* to the infinitive, eg. *zijnde* – being, *lopend(e)* – walking, *kijkend(e)* – looking. Sentence or word rhythm determines whether the *-e* is added; for example, all monosyllabic verbs add *-de*.

The present participle is not commonly used in Dutch as most English *-ing* constructions are expressed in other ways (see p. 168). It is used in the following instances:

11.16.1 Many adjectives are formed from the infinitive + *-d*:

een lachende vrouw

a laughing woman

een roerend verhaal

a moving story

dit is uitstekend

this is excellent

volgende week

next week

volgend jaar

next year

de wassende maan

the waxing moon

11.16.2 It is commonly used as an adverb of manner, in which case it has a direct parallel in English:

Het kind kwam huilend binnen.

The child came in crying.

Ik ging er lopend naartoe.

I did it by walking/on foot.

11.16.3 It renders some English *-ing* forms in certain standard expressions:

*(als) vrouw zijnde,...*²²

being a woman,...

jou kennende,...

knowing you,...

zodoende,...

by so doing,...

In addition, the form *al -de* meaning 'while *-ing*' is quite common in good style:

al reizende leert men veel

one learns a lot while travelling

al lezende ontdekte hij dat...

while reading he discovered that...

11.16.4 In the written language it is often used in much the same way as *-ing* in English (see p. 169 for alternative constructions commonly used in the spoken language).

Aankomend op de Grote Markt in Brussel verbaasde hij zich dat...

Arriving at the Grand' Place in Brussels he was amazed that...

Uitgaande van wat hier geschreven staat...

Going on what is written here...

Daar stond een ruïne, bestaande uit een toren en een gedeelte van de stadsmuur.

There was a ruin there consisting of a tower and a section of the city wall.

Dit zeggend verliet hij de kamer.

Saying this he left the room.

11.16.5 It can also be used to form nouns, in which case it always ends in *-de* and takes a plural in *-n*.

de overlevende(n)

the survivor(s)

de inzittende(n)

the passenger(s) (in a car)

11.16.6 A few present participles have assumed the function of prepositions:

gedurende

during

betreffende

concerning, with regard to

aangaande

²² Although a common expression, some people would disapprove of the use of *als* in this case.

11.17 How to render English '-ing' forms in Dutch

The use of -ing constructions in the formation of the progressive continuous form of the present and imperfect tenses (i.e. I am/was buying a book) is described on p. 113 and p. 115 and is thus not discussed here.

Although there is the possibility of expressing the English present participle literally in Dutch on occasions, this is rarely done in colloquial speech and such forms are reserved for literary or more formal style (see p. 167).

The present participle is usually avoided in Dutch. It is generally necessary to paraphrase an English sentence containing an -ing construction in order to translate it into natural Dutch. The following are the most common ways of doing so. (When seeking the appropriate translation, look at the phrases in bold type for the construction which most resembles the one you have to put into Dutch).

11.17.1 With the infinitive plus *te*:

It is lovely **being** here.

Het is heerlijk hier te zijn.

I **succeeded in seeing** the queen.

Het lukte mij de koningin te zien.

I **like staying** at home.

Ik hou ervan thuis te blijven. (also: *Ik blijf graag thuis.* see 11.17.11)

He left **without saying** a word.

Hij vertrok zonder een woord te zeggen. (see 11.17.3)

He remained seated **instead of standing** up.

Hij bleef zitten in plaats van op te staan. (see 11.17.3, also p. 202)

11.17.2 English -ing clauses introduced by 'by' or 'from' are rendered in Dutch by infinitive clauses introduced by *door* or *van* (see p. 201):

I'm trying to lose weight **by eating** nothing.

Ik probeer af te vallen door niets te eten.

By doing that you'll achieve nothing.

Door dat te doen zul je niets bereiken.

You get tired **from reading** so much.

Je wordt erg moe van zo veel te lezen.

11.17.3 Some -ing clauses are avoided by using *dat* constructions in Dutch:

They had already arrived there **without our knowing** it.

Ze waren er al aangekomen zonder dat wij het wisten.

(Compare: *We waren er al aangekomen zonder het te weten*

where the subject of both parts is the same, see 11.17.1)

Instead of him doing it I had to do it. (compare 11.17.1)

In plaats van dat hij het deed, moest ik het doen.

11.17.4 Some -ing clauses can be paraphrased by 'since/because' clauses which are rendered in Dutch by the conjunctions *daar/omdat*, the former being rather formal:

Being sick he could not come.

Daar hij ziek was, kon hij niet komen. (i.e. Since he was sick...)

Being students we didn't need to pay anything.

Omdat wij studenten waren, hoefden we niets te betalen.

11.17.5 When there is a temporal sense expressed in the English -ing construction, subordinating conjunctions of time are used in Dutch.

Finding the house uninhabited, he didn't want to...

Toen hij merkte dat het huis onbewoond was, wilde hij niet...

Having recovered he went home.

Toen hij hersteld was, ging hij naar huis.

Before going to bed we drank a cup of tea.

Voordat we naar bed gingen, dronken we een kopje thee.

(After) having written a letter to his mother he went and sat in front of the T.V.

Na een brief aan zijn moeder te hebben geschreven, ging hij voor de televisie zitten.

This could also be translated as follows:

Nadat hij een brief aan zijn moeder geschreven had, ging hij...

When writing a letter you must be neat.

Wanneer je een brief schrijft, moet je netjes zijn.

11.17.6 Some -ing clauses can be paraphrased with 'while' and these are rendered in Dutch by a subordinate clause introduced by *terwijl*.

Saying that he smiled.

Terwijl hij dat zei, glimlachte hij.

11.17.7 If the English construction is 'to stand, sit or lie doing something', Dutch translates the present participle with an infinitive.

He **stood waving** at the window.

Hij stond aan het raam te wuiven.

They **were sitting (sat) looking** at the film.

Zij zaten naar de film te kijken.

When such constructions are put in the (plu-)perfect tense one is dealing with double infinitives.

We were standing (stood) talking the whole time.
Wij hebben de hele tijd staan praten.

Similarly of course the other verbs that occur in double infinitive constructions translate -ing in this way (see p. 156).

I saw him coming.
Ik zag hem komen./Ik heb hem zien komen.
He heard me singing.
Hij hoorde mij zingen./Hij heeft mij horen zingen.

Note: I have an aunt living in Friesland.
Ik heb een tante in Friesland wonen.
He has a painting by R. hanging on the wall.
Hij heeft een schilderij van R. aan de muur hangen.

11.17.8 Some English -ing constructions are disguised relative clauses and must be translated as such into Dutch.

The tree standing in the park is very old.
De boom die in het park staat, is erg oud.
The man in the corner reading the paper is my uncle.
De man in de hoek die de krant zit te lezen, is mijn oom.

11.17.9 An infinitive noun construction also exists but can usually be avoided by other means:

You must be careful when getting in.
Je moet oppassen bij het instappen.

This could of course be translated as follows:

Je moet oppassen wanneer/als je instapt.

11.17.10 The so-called gerund in English, i.e. the present participle used as a noun, is rendered in Dutch by the infinitive – such nouns are always neuter (see 11.17.9).

The cooking of vegetables is a great art.
Het koken van groente is een grote kunst.
Writing novels doesn't interest me.
Het schrijven van romans interesseert me niet.
Going out is very expensive.
Uitgaan is erg duur.

Note: No smoking.
Niet roken. (an imperative in Dutch)

11.17.11 'To like/prefer doing something' is rendered by the very commonly used construction *iets graag/liever doen*.

I like watching him.
Ik kijk graag naar hem.
They prefer sitting inside.
Zij zitten liever binnen.

also: He likes getting up early.
Hij houdt ervan vroeg op te staan.

11.17.12 Constructions such as 'to think of doing something' are rendered by a clause containing a prepositional object followed by an infinitive clause (see *er*, p. 236).

He is thinking of buying a boat.
Hij denkt erover een boot te kopen.
I suspected my family of having sold the house.
Ik verdacht er mijn familie van het huis te hebben verkocht.
Does anyone feel like going to the cinema?
Heeft er iemand zin in naar de bioscoop te gaan?

11.17.13 Occasionally an -ing construction introduces a new clause and can be avoided in Dutch by inserting a conjunction and making a normal co-ordinate clause of it.

As he was very ill he stayed in bed all day, not getting up till the evening.
Daar hij erg ziek was, bleef hij de hele dag in bed liggen en stond pas 's avonds op.

11.18 Reflexive verbs (*wederkerende werkwoorden*)

Reflexive verbs are verbs which have as their object²³ a reflexive pronoun, i.e. the action reflects back on the subject of the verb. The concept is known to English but is not nearly as common. For example, the verb 'to shave' can be used in two ways: I shave every day; the barber shaved me. In Dutch the verb *scheren* must have an object;

23 Some reflexive verbs can also take a direct object and thus behave as transitive verbs at the same time, eg. *ik herinnerde me hem erg goed, zij kon 'het zich niet veroorloven*.
Note: if a reflexive verb governs a direct object *het* (although most reflexive verbs are intransitive) the *het* precedes the reflexive pronoun:

Hij herinnerde het zich niet meer.
Ik kan het me niet veroorloven.

Compare:

Hij herinnerde zich mijn moeder niet meer.
Ik kan me geen auto veroorloven.

that is to say, if you are not shaving someone else (eg. *de kapper schoor me*) then you must be shaving yourself and must thus say so, i.e. *ik schoor me iedere dag*. To omit this reflexive pronoun would be incorrect and is an error commonly committed by English speakers.

There are two basic sorts of reflexive verbs:

- a those that are always reflexive;
- b those that may be used reflexively but which can also be used as transitive verbs with direct objects (such as *scheren* above).

It is impossible to list all the verbs in both groups but the list on the following page will serve to illustrate the concepts.

The reflexive pronouns are as follows:

	singular		plural
1st person	<i>me</i> (lit. <i>mij</i>)	– myself	<i>ons</i> – ourselves
2nd person	<i>je</i>	– yourself	<i>je</i> – yourselves
	<i>u</i>	– yourself	<i>u</i> – yourselves
	<i>zich</i>		<i>zich</i>
3rd person	<i>zich</i>	– himself	<i>zich</i> – themselves
		– herself	
		– itself	
		– oneself	

Example:

<i>ik heb me gewassen</i> (I washed (myself) etc.)	<i>wij hebben ons gewassen</i>
<i>jij hebt je gewassen</i>	<i>jullie hebben je gewassen</i>
<i>u hebt u gewassen</i> ²⁴	<i>u hebt u gewassen</i>
<i>u heeft zich gewassen</i> ²⁴	<i>u heeft zich gewassen</i>
<i>hij heeft zich gewassen</i>	<i>zij hebben zich gewassen</i>
<i>zij heeft zich gewassen</i>	
<i>het heeft zich gewassen</i>	

24 The reflexive *u* must be used with *hebt* and *zich* with *heeft*, i.e. a second person reflexive pronoun with a second person verb and a third person reflexive pronoun with a third person verb.

Note: All reflexive verbs are conjugated with *hebben*, unlike Romance languages.

11.18.1 VERBS THAT ARE ALWAYS REFLEXIVE (exemplary list only)

<i>zich aanstellen</i>	to show off, carry on
<i>zich afvragen</i>	to wonder
<i>zich begeven</i>	to proceed, make one's way
<i>zich bemoeien met</i>	to meddle with
<i>zich bevinden</i>	to find oneself
<i>zich gedragen</i>	to behave
<i>zich generen</i>	to feel embarrassed
<i>zich haasten</i>	to hurry
<i>zich herinneren</i>	to remember
<i>zich herstellen</i>	to recover
<i>zich indenken</i>	to imagine, visualize
<i>zich inspannen</i>	to exert oneself
<i>zich kapotwerken</i>	to work one's fingers to the bone
<i>zich melden</i>	to report
<i>zich in acht nemen voor</i>	to be on one's guard against
<i>zich onthouden van</i>	to refrain from
<i>zich schamen voor</i>	to be ashamed of
<i>zich uitsloven</i>	to go to trouble (for someone)
<i>zich verbeelden</i>	to imagine
<i>zich verdiepen in</i>	to go (deeply) into (a problem)
<i>zich vergissen in</i>	to be mistaken
<i>zich verhangen</i>	to hang oneself
<i>zich verheugen op</i>	to look forward to
<i>zich verkijken op</i>	to make a mistake (in looking at s.t.)
<i>zich verlezen</i>	to make a mistake (in reading)
<i>zich verschrijven</i>	to make a mistake (in writing)
<i>zich verslapen</i>	to sleep in (by mistake), oversleep
<i>zich verslikken in</i>	to choke on, swallow (wrong way)
<i>zich voorstellen</i>	to imagine

Note that some such verbs can also be used as transitive verbs (like those in 11.18.2) but then their meaning is quite different from that given here:

herstellen – to repair, *herinneren* – to remind, *verdiepen* – to deepen,
voorstellen – to introduce.

Verbs in this group are never used with *-zelf*. (see p. 175)

11.18.2 TRANSITIVE VERBS THAT CAN BE USED REFLEXIVELY

All the verbs in this group also occur as normal transitive verbs, eg. *hij verdedigde zich* – he defended himself, but also *het leger verdedigde de stad* – the army defended the town.

The verbs in this category are actually too numerous to list in their entirety. For instance, one would not normally call the verb *verkopen* (to sell) a reflexive verb, but there can be occasions when one wants to express 'to sell oneself' and this must be rendered by *zich verkopen*.

The following list, although very limited, will serve to illustrate:

* <i>zich aankleden</i>	to dress (oneself), get dressed
<i>zich amuseren</i>	to amuse, enjoy oneself
* <i>zich bewegen</i>	to move
<i>zich bezighouden met</i>	to busy oneself with
* <i>zich ergeren</i>	to get irritated
* <i>zich inschrijven</i>	to enrol
<i>zich noemen</i>	to call oneself
* <i>zich omdraaien</i>	to turn around
<i>zich opgeven</i>	to give oneself up
<i>zich opofferen voor</i>	to sacrifice oneself for
* <i>zich opstapelen</i>	to pile up, accumulate
<i>zich opwinden</i>	to get excited
* <i>zich scheren</i>	to shave
<i>zich snijden</i> ²⁵	to cut oneself
* <i>zich terugtrekken</i>	to retreat, pull back
* <i>zich uitkleden</i>	to undress oneself, get undressed
* <i>zich verbazen</i>	to be amazed
* <i>zich verbergen</i>	to hide (oneself)
* <i>zich verschuilen</i>	
* <i>zich verstoppen</i>	
<i>zich verdedigen</i>	to defend oneself
* <i>zich verkleden</i>	to change one's clothes
* <i>zich veroorloven</i>	to afford ²⁶
* <i>zich vervelen</i>	to be bored
* <i>zich voelen</i>	to feel
<i>zich voorbereiden op</i>	to prepare oneself for
<i>zich voorstellen</i>	to introduce oneself

25 Note the following peculiarity of *zich snijden*: if the part of the body one has cut is mentioned, it is preceded by *in* and the definite article is commonly used (see p. 60).

Ik heb me in mijn/de vinger gesneden.

26 There are three ways of expressing 'to afford' (actually always expressed in Dutch as 'to be able to afford').

Ik kan het me niet veroorloven.

Ik kan het me niet permitteren.

Ik kan het niet bekostigen. (i.e. not reflexive)

* <i>zich wassen</i>	to wash (oneself)
<i>zich wegen</i>	to weigh oneself
<i>zich wijden aan</i>	to devote oneself to

* The verbs marked with an asterisk illustrate the problem involved with Dutch reflexives: in English these verbs would seldom be reflexive.

he dressed	<i>hij kleeedde zich aan</i>
he turned around	<i>hij draaide zich om</i>
he remembered me	<i>hij herinnerde zich mij</i>
he hid	<i>hij verstopte zich</i>

11.18.3 USE OF ZICHZELF

1 All verbs in group 11.18.2 (i.e. those that can also occur as transitive verbs) can on occasion use *zichzelf* instead of a simple *zich*, but only when one needs to emphasize that one washed or dressed oneself and not somebody else.

Ik kleeedde Jantje aan en toen kleeedde ik mezelf aan. (stress on *zelf*)

Ik woog de koffers en toen mezelf. (stress on *zelf*)

Zij hebben haar niet verdedigd maar alleen zichzelf. (stress on *zelf*)

2 There is also a group of verbs that one would not normally regard as reflexive verbs but which can be used reflexively, but then always with *zichzelf*. Such verbs cause complications for the English-speaking student who is often inclined to use *zichzelf* with the other more numerous verbs that require only *zich*. All verbs requiring *zichzelf* imply an emphasis on the self.

<i>voor zichzelf beginnen</i>	to begin for oneself
<i>bij zichzelf denken</i>	to think to oneself
<i>zichzelf haten</i>	to hate oneself
<i>alleen met zichzelf</i>	to take only oneself
<i>rekening houden</i>	into account
<i>zichzelf kennen</i>	to know oneself
<i>in zichzelf lachen</i>	to laugh to oneself
<i>over zichzelf praten</i>	to talk about oneself
<i>zichzelf zien als</i>	to see oneself as
<i>zichzelf zijn</i>	to be oneself

11.18.4 USE OF INDEPENDENT ZELF

English often uses *myself*, *yourself* etc. with verbs that would not normally be classified as reflexive verbs. In such cases the reflexive pronoun is used to emphasize who the doer of the action concerned is. In Dutch these pronouns are expressed simply by *zelf*.

I did it myself.

Ik heb het zelf gedaan.

They painted the house themselves.

Zij hebben het huis zelf geverfd.

11.18.5 USE OF INDEPENDENT *ZICH*

In sentences where the prepositional object and the subject pronouns are one and the same person, the simple reflexive pronoun is used in Dutch.

I have no money on me.

Ik heb geen geld bij me.

He looked behind him.

Hij keek achter zich.

The commanders had a lot of soldiers under them.

De kommandanten hadden veel soldaten onder zich.

The expression *op zich(zelf)*, which grammatically speaking belongs in this category, is usually best translated by 'actually' or 'in fact'.

Op zich is dat niet zo erg.

Actually that's not so bad.

Het is op zich een vreemde uitdrukking.

It's a strange expression in fact.

11.18.6 USE OF *Z'N EIGEN* AS A REFLEXIVE PRONOUN

In substandard speech one often hears *m'n eigen*, *je eigen*, *z'n eigen* etc. instead of the reflexive *me*, *je*, *zich* etc. This practice, although common, is not to be copied.

Ik ben m'n eigen kapot geschrokken.

I got a terrible shock.

Jij kent je eigen niet.

You don't know yourself.

Note: Dutch, like English, uses the reciprocal pronoun *elkaar* in sentences such as the following, not the reflexive as is the case in French and German.

We hebben elkaar in de stad ontmoet.

We met each other in town.

11.19 Transitive and intransitive verbs

(overgankelijke en onovergankelijke werkwoorden)

11.19.1 Very often difficulties arise with verbs because the distinction between transitive and intransitive is not fully understood: transitive verbs are those that can take a direct object and intransitive verbs are those that can't. Verbs that are transitive in English may not necessarily be so in Dutch. For example, if one wants to translate 'I answer the question' one will find in the dictionary under 'to answer' the words *antwoorden* and *beantwoorden*. A good dictionary will indicate that the former is intransitive and the latter transitive. The above example will thus be translated by either *ik beantwoord de vraag* or *ik antwoord op de vraag* (intransitive verbs often take prepositional objects).

It is not possible to give rules for such difficulties but the following common examples will serve to illustrate what one has to be wary of:

to burn	= <i>branden</i> (intr.)	– <i>het hout brandde</i>
	<i>verbranden</i> (trans.)	– <i>hij verbrandde het hout</i>
to leave	= <i>vertrekken</i> (intr.)	– <i>de trein vertrok om tien uur</i>
	<i>verlaten</i> (trans.)	– <i>de trein verliet Amsterdam om tien uur</i>
to taste	= <i>smaken</i> (intr.)	– <i>de appel smaakt goed</i>
	<i>proeven</i> (trans.)	– <i>proef deze appel</i>

11.19.2 Sometimes a verb which is both transitive and intransitive in English, but only intransitive in Dutch, is made transitive by the use of *laten* as an auxiliary (in more formal style *doen*). This is done when no separate transitive verb exists in Dutch.

to sink	= <i>zinken</i> (intr.)	– <i>het stuk metaal zonk</i>
(trans. & intr.)		the piece of metal sank
	<i>laten zinken</i> (trans.)	– <i>ik heb het laten zinken</i>
		I sank it
to shrink	= <i>krimpen</i> (intr.)	– <i>de trui is gekrompen</i>
(trans. & intr.)		the jumper has shrunk
	<i>laten krimpen</i> (trans.)	– <i>ik heb hem laten krimpen</i>
		I shrank it
to run	= <i>lopen</i> (intr.)	– <i>het paard liep langs het strand</i>
(trans. & intr.)		the horse ran along the beach
	<i>laten lopen</i> (trans.)	– <i>ik heb het langs het strand laten lopen</i>
		I ran it along the beach

Such *laten* constructions are very common in Dutch (see p. 156).

11.19.3 Transitive verbs are usually conjugated with *hebben* in the perfect tenses

(see p. 143 for the very few exceptions). Intransitive verbs, on the other hand, use either *hebben* or *zijn*, eg. *hij is gestorven; het huis heeft urenlang gebrand.*

11.19.4 Intransitive verbs cannot be used in the passive as the passive is by definition a construction where the object of the active sentence becomes the subject. (see note 21, p. 161)

11.20 Impersonal verbs

Impersonal verbs are those which only occur in the third person (usually only in the singular, but some can occur in the plural too). In the third person singular the subject is always *het*. English has impersonal verbs too but Dutch has more.

11.20.1 VERBS THAT ARE IMPERSONAL IN ENGLISH AND DUTCH

1 Verbs denoting weather conditions which are used only in the third person singular:

<i>het bliksemt</i>	there's lightning
<i>het dondert</i>	it's thundering
<i>het dooit</i>	it's thawing
<i>het hagelt</i>	it's hailing
<i>het mist</i>	there's a fog
<i>het onweert</i>	there's a thunderstorm
<i>het regent</i>	it's raining
<i>het schemert</i>	it's dawning, it's twilight
<i>het sneeuwt</i>	it's snowing
<i>het stormt</i>	there's a storm
<i>het trekt/tocht</i>	there's a draught

2 Several other verbs that can be used in the third person singular:

<i>gebeuren, geschieden</i> (lit.):	
<i>het gebeurde 's nachts</i>	it happened at night
<i>betreffen:</i>	
<i>wat mij betreft, ...</i>	as far as I'm concerned, ...
<i>overkomen:</i>	
<i>het overkwam me</i>	it happened to me

11.20.2 VERBS THAT ARE IMPERSONAL IN DUTCH BUT NOT IN ENGLISH

These verbs often denote a feeling or reaction.

<i>bevallen:</i>	
<i>het bevalt²⁷ me</i>	I like it
<i>spijten:</i>	
<i>het spijt me</i>	I'm sorry
<i>lukken:</i>	
<i>het lukte me (niet)</i>	I succeeded (didn't succeed)
<i>zwaar vallen:</i>	
<i>het valt me zwaar</i>	I find it difficult
<i>mee-, tegenvallen:</i>	
<i>het valt²⁷ me mee (tegen)</i>	I (don't) like it
<i>verbazen:</i>	
<i>het verbaast²⁷ me</i>	I'm amazed
<i>verheugen:</i>	
<i>het verheugt²⁷ me</i>	I'm pleased
<i>verwonderen:</i>	
<i>het verwondert²⁷ me</i>	I'm surprised

These verbs are often followed by *dat* clauses.

11.21 Verbal prefixes (*werkwoordelijke voorvoegsels*)

In Dutch both separable and inseparable verbal prefixes are used to form new words. This is a very economical means of vocabulary building. In many instances there are parallel examples in English, eg. to go = *gaan*, to undergo = *ondergaan*; to look = *kijken*, to look up = *opkijken*. (The accents are not normally written but merely serve to indicate the stress.) Often, however, the addition of a prefix in Dutch renders a totally new word, eg. *spreken* = to speak, *tegenspreken* = to contradict; *huren* = to hire/rent, *verhuren* = to rent out; *geven* = to give, *toegeven* = to admit.

Separable verbs are recognised by the fact that the prefix bears the stress; this is not the case with inseparable verbs, eg. *vóórstellen* = to introduce, *voorspéllen* = to predict.

A verb that normally takes *hebben* in the perfect tense may, by the addition of a prefix, take on a new meaning which requires *zijn* in the same tense; the reverse is also true, eg. *staan* (to stand) takes *hebben* but *opstaan* (to get/stand up) takes *zijn*; *komen* (to come) takes *zijn* but *voorkómen* (to prevent) takes *hebben*.

27 These verbs can be used with other persons, eg. *ik beviel hem niet, jij valt me tegen etc.*, but are commonly found in the third person and in such contexts are rendered by personal constructions in English as is shown in the above examples.

11.21.1 SEPARABLE VERBS (*scheidbare werkwoorden*)

There are three sorts of separable prefixes:

1 Prepositional prefixes, many of which can also be inseparable, eg. *aan, bij, door, mee**²⁸ (from *mede = met*), *om, onder, op**, *over, tegen**, *toe**²⁸ (from *tot*), *uit**, *voor*.

(* those that can only be separable)

2 Nominal prefixes formed from what is actually the object of the verb but which has been used so frequently with certain verbs that the object has come to be regarded as a verbal prefix and behaves as a separable prefix, i.e. is joined to the verb in the infinitive and the past participle. It is not wrong, however, to write these prefixes separately, eg. *koffiedrinken* (to drink coffee), *haarknippen* (to cut hair), *boekbinden* (to bind books), *lesgeven* (to teach), *gelukwensen* (to congratulate), *televisiekijken* (to watch television), *schaatsenrijden* (to skate).

3 There are also many verbs whose prefix is adverbial rather than nominal, eg. *goedkeuren* (to approve), *misrekenen* (to calculate incorrectly), *samengaan* (to go along), *tegemoetkomen* (to meet, fall in with), *teleurstellen* (to disappoint), *terechtzetten* (to set straight), *thuiskomen* (to come home), *weergeven* (to return, reproduce).

Tenses of separable verbs

When a separable verb is conjugated in the **present** and **imperfect** tenses and the **imperative** the prefix goes to the end of the clause:

meegaan (to go along) – *hij gaat/ging vanmiddag mee*
opstaan (to get up) – *sta onmiddellijk op!*

These prefixes can, however, precede prepositional adjuncts in which case they do not have to stand at the very end of the clause:

Wij gingen samen weg na afloop van het programma.

In formal writing the prefix may go to the end of the clause in such cases, but the above is more common.

In the **future** tense or after modals the infinitive stays together at the end of the clause:

Ik zal je later opbellen.
Hij moest me aan haar voorstellen.

When other verbs also stand at the end of the clause, there is a tendency (very common in speech) to split the separable verb and place the prefix before the other verbs:

Ik zou hem op kunnen bellen.
Ik begrijp niet waarom je niet vroeger op had kunnen staan.

This is often avoided in more formal written style.

The **past participle** of separable verbs is formed by inserting *ge-* between the prefix and the verbal stem, eg. *voorstellen – voorgesteld, opgraven – opgegraven*. Such compound past participles are often split (particularly in speech) just like the infinitives above:

Ik weet dat hij je op heeft gebeld.
Ik begrijp niet waarom hij niet mee is gegaan.

When the **infinitive** of a separable verb is accompanied by *te*, the *te* is placed between the prefix and the verb and the three parts are written separately, unlike German:

Hij hoopt zijn vakantie in Spanje door te brengen.
 (also *door te kunnen brengen*)
Probeer vóór middernacht terug te komen.

Note: Often confusion arises between separable verbs with prepositional prefixes and verbs followed by prepositional objects,

opkijken – to look up; *kijken op* – to look at (a watch)
overschrijven – to copy; *schrijven over* – to write about
doorlopen – to continue walking; *lopen door* – to walk through

A verb like *lopen door* further complicates the issue because of the tendency for some prepositions to follow the object to which they refer in order to indicate a motion (see p. 219); such cases as *doorlopen* and *lopen door* look and sound the same but remain semantically different:

doorlopen *ik liep gewoon door*
 ik ben gewoon doorgelopen

lopen door *ik liep door het bos*
 ik liep het bos door
 ik ben door het bos gelopen
 ik ben het bos door gelopen

(see also p. 238)

11.22.2 INSEPARABLE VERBS

There are three sorts of inseparable prefixes:

- 1 Prefixes that can only be inseparable, eg. *be-*, *er-*, *ge-*, *her-*, *ont-*, *ver-*.
- 2 Prepositional prefixes which can also act as separable prefixes (see p. 180), eg. *aan*, *door*, *mis* (actually an adverb), *om*, *onder*, *over*, *vol* (actually an adverb), *voor*, *weer* (actually an adverb).
- 3 There are just a few compound verbs which do not separate but which, unlike the verbs in groups 1 & 2, bear the stress:

beeldhouwen (to sculpt), *glimlachen* (to smile), *knipogen* (to wink), *raadplegen* (to consult), *rangschikken* (to arrange in order), *stofzuigen* (to vacuum clean), *voetballen* (to play football), *waarschuwen* (to warn).

All the verbs in groups 1 & 2 are conjugated like normal verbs in all tenses, never divide, and because they already contain an unstressed prefix, no *ge-* (a further unstressed prefix) is added to form the past participle:

hij herstelde de televisie – *hij heeft de televisie hersteld*
hij voorspelde slecht weer – *hij had slecht weer voorspeld*

(The above accents should not be copied in writing; they are only to illustrate the stress.)

Verbs in group 3 do take *ge-*, but this does not go between the prefix and the verb as with separable verbs:

Wij hebben de hele dag gevoetbald.

It is not always possible to isolate the meaning of these prefixes but there are a few patterns which can be described:

Meaning of the prefixes in group 1 (those in group 2 and 3 are usually self-evident)

be- is an extremely common prefix and has a variety of functions:

a it can be used to make the intransitive verbs that take a prepositional object transitive, sometimes with a slight change in meaning,

antwoorden op – *beantwoorden* (to answer), *kijken naar* – *bekijken* (to look at), *luisteren naar* (to listen to) – *beluisteren* (to listen to), *oordelen over* – *beoordelen* (to judge, assess), *spreken over* (to talk about) – *bespreken* (to discuss).

Also: *eindigen* (intr.) – *beëindigen* (trans.) (to finish, end).

b sometimes the verb assumes a slightly different meaning, as is often the case in group a, but here there is no question of a preposition being replaced,

critiseren (to criticise) – *becritiseren* (= *kritiek hebben op*), *denken* (to think) – *bedenken* (to think of, devise, concoct), *dienen* (to serve God etc.) – *bedienen* (to serve, attend to guests, wait upon customers), *groeten* (to greet) – *begroeten* (to receive, welcome), *rekenen* (to do sums, count) – *berekenen* (to calculate, figure out), *studeren* (to learn, study a subject) – *bestuderen* (to analyse, study a book).

c in a few isolated cases the *be-* has no force at all and is merely a more formal form of the verb concerned

hoeven – *behoeven* (to need + neg.),
horen – *behoren* (to be fitting, proper).

Note: the verbs *danken/bedanken* (to thank) do not differ in meaning but do differ in usage.

Ik dank u, meneer. (direct speech)
Zij heeft haar tante bedankt.

er- is of German origin and is found in only three words and it is not possible to define a meaning,

zich erbarmen over (to have pity on), *erkennen* (to acknowledge, recognize), *ervaren* (to experience).

West-Duitsland heeft de DDR erkend.

West Germany has recognised the German Democratic Republic.

ge- is not a common prefix and its meaning avoids definition,

geloven (to believe), *gelijken* (to resemble), *zich gedragen* (to behave), *gebeuren* (to happen).

Ik heb hem niet geloofd.

I didn't believe him.

Hij heeft zich slecht gedragen.

He behaved disgracefully.

In the case of *gelukken* (to succeed) and *geraken* (to get, attain) the prefix is superfluous and is usually not used. As with *behoeven* and *behoren* (see above) the forms with *ge-* sound rather formal.

her- is very common and still productive. It is similar in meaning and function to English *re-* (i.e. again),

heradvertieren (to readvertise), *herbenoemen* (to reappoint), *herkennen* (to recognise), *herschrijven* (to rewrite).

Ik heb mijn eigen moeder niet herkend.

I didn't recognise my own mother. (see *er-* above)

ont- basically means 'away' but this meaning is sometimes hard to isolate. It is a common prefix,

ontsnappen (to escape), *ontkomen* (to get away), *ontstaan* (to originate), *ontploffen* (to explode), *ontmoeten* (to meet).

ver- is the most common of all inseparable prefixes and has a variety of meanings and functions:

it commonly means 'change':

veranderen (to change), *vertalen* (to translate), *verwisselen* (to confuse), *vernederslandsen* (to 'dutchify'), *verkopen* (to sell), *verhuren* (to rent out), *verhuizen* (to move)

it also commonly means 'wrong' (in which case the verbs are usually reflexive):

zich vergissen (to make a mistake), *zich verkijken* (to look wrongly), *zich verspreken* (to make an error in speech), *zich verschijven* (to make a mistake in writing)

it is used to make *branden* (to burn intr.) a transitive verb *verbranden* (to burn trans.):

ik heb de kist verbrand; hij brandde niet makkelijk

Examples of verbs in group 2 with prepositional prefixes:

It is impossible to give a complete list but the following will exemplify the concept. When the same compound exists as both a separable and an inseparable verb, the meaning of the former is usually more literal than that of the latter, eg. *ondergaan* – to go down, set (of the sun), *ondergaan* – to undergo:

<i>aanvaard</i>	to accept	<i>ondernemen</i>	to undertake
<i>aanbidden</i>	to worship	<i>overleven</i>	to survive
<i>doordénken</i>	to consider	<i>overtúigen</i>	to convince
<i>doorzóeken</i>	to search	<i>volbréngen</i>	to fulfil
<i>misbrúiken</i>	to misuse, abuse	<i>voldóen</i>	to satisfy
<i>zich misdrágen</i>	to misbehave	<i>voorkómen</i>	to prevent
<i>omschrijven</i>	to define	<i>voorspéllen</i>	to predict
<i>omvátten</i>	to comprise	<i>weerspiégelen</i>	to reflect
<i>onderbréken</i>	to interrupt	<i>weerstáan</i>	to resist

11.23 Verbs followed by prepositional objects

Some of the verbs below will be found under more than one preposition with a difference in meaning. Many verbs are followed by the same preposition in English and are thus not always included here. Others require no preposition in English but do in Dutch, eg. *trouwen met* – to marry, *genieten van* – to enjoy, *houden van* – to love. The verbs are grouped under the Dutch prepositions they are followed by in order to give the student a feeling for the use of the prepositions in Dutch. This approach then fulfils a function the dictionary does not.

aan

<i>zich aanpassen</i>	to fit in with, assimilate	<i>meedoen</i>	to take part in
<i>beantwoorden</i>	to correspond	<i>onderwerpen</i>	to subject to
<i>behoren</i>	to belong to	<i>ontkomen</i>	to evade (a tax etc.)
<i>besteden</i>	to spend on	<i>ontlenen</i>	to borrow (words from Latin etc.)
<i>bijdragen</i>	to contribute to	<i>ontsnappen</i>	to escape from
<i>binden</i>	to tie to	<i>overdragen</i>	to transfer to
<i>deelnemen</i>	to take part in	<i>overhandigen</i>	to hand over to
<i>denken</i>	to think of	<i>overlijden</i>	to die from
<i>doen</i>	to take part in, go in for (sport)	<i>schrijven</i>	to write to
		<i>sterven</i>	to die from
<i>doen denken</i>	to remind of s.t.	<i>sturen</i>	to send to
<i>zich ergeren</i>	to be irritated by	<i>toeschrijven</i>	to attribute to
<i>geloven</i>	to believe in (God)	<i>toevertrouwen</i>	to entrust to
<i>geven</i>	to give to	<i>toevoegen</i>	to add to
<i>grenzen</i>	to border on	<i>twijfelen</i>	to doubt s.t.
<i>behoefte hebben</i>	to be in need of	<i>vertellen</i>	to tell to s.o.
<i>gebrek hebben</i>	to be short of	<i>voldoen</i>	to satisfy (demands)
<i>hechten</i>	to believe in	<i>voorafgaan</i>	to precede s.t.
<i>herinneren</i>	to remind s.o. of	<i>voorstellen</i>	to introduce to
<i>zich houden</i>	to stick to (an agreement)	<i>wennen</i>	to get used to
<i>laten zien</i>	to show to	<i>zich wijden</i>	to devote o.s. to
<i>lenen</i>	to lend to	<i>wijten</i>	to blame s.o. for s.t.
<i>leveren</i>	to deliver to	<i>zenden</i>	to send to s.o.
<i>lijden</i>	to suffer from (a disease)		

bij

<i>aankomen</i>	to arrive at s.o.'s place	<i>passen</i>	to match
<i>(be)horen</i>	to belong together, go with (house and land)	<i>vergelijken</i>	to compare with
		<i>wonen</i>	to live with (i.e. at s.o.'s place)

boven

<i>verkiezen</i>	to prefer to
------------------	--------------

door

<i>vervangen</i>	to replace by
------------------	---------------

in

<i>aankomen</i>	to arrive at
<i>belangstellen</i>	to be interested in
<i>bijten</i>	to bite (a part of s.o.'s body, see p. 60)
<i>geloven</i>	to believe in s.o.
<i>trek/zin hebben</i>	to feel like
<i>slagen</i>	to succeed at, in
<i>zich specialiseren</i>	to specialise in

met (see note p. 189)

<i>zich bemoeien</i>	to mind (one's own business), interfere in
<i>condoleren</i>	to condole with s.o. on s.t.
<i>feliciteren</i>	to congratulate on
<i>akkoord gaan</i>	to agree with
<i>gebeuren</i>	to happen to
<i>gelukwensen</i>	to congratulate on
<i>overeenkomen</i>	to correspond with, agree with s.t.

naar

<i>blaffen</i>	to bark at
<i>geuren</i>	to smell of
<i>gluren</i>	to peep, peer at
<i>gooien</i>	to throw to
<i>graven</i>	to dig for
<i>hunkeren</i>	to pine for
<i>kijken</i>	to look at
<i>luisteren</i>	to listen to
<i>oordelen</i>	to judge from
<i>pikken</i>	to pick at
<i>rieken</i>	to smell of
<i>ruik</i>	to smell off
<i>schrijven</i> ²⁹	to write to
<i>smaken</i>	to taste of
<i>solliciteren</i>	to apply for
<i>staren</i>	to stare at

om

<i>bédelen</i>	to beg for
<i>benijden</i>	to envy s.o. s.t.
<i>denken</i>	to think of, remember
<i>geven</i>	to care about
<i>huilen</i>	to cry for, about s.t.
<i>(glim)lachen</i> ³⁰	to (smile) laugh at

<i>veranderen</i>	to change into
<i>zich verdiepen</i>	to go deeply into, lose o.s. (in one's work)
<i>geïnteresseerd zijn</i>	to be interested in
<i>verdelen</i>	to divide into
<i>voorzien (in een behoefte)</i>	to satisfy a need

<i>overeenstemmen</i>	to be in keeping with
<i>praten</i>	to talk to
<i>spotten</i>	to scoff at
<i>spreken</i>	to speak to
<i>trouwen</i>	to marry
<i>vergelijken</i>	to compare with
<i>wonen</i>	to live with
<i>het eens zijn</i>	to agree with s.o.

<i>stinken</i>	to stink of
<i>streven</i>	to strive for
<i>sturen</i> ²⁹	to send to
<i>uitkijken</i>	to look out for, look forward to
<i>er uitzien</i>	to look (like)
<i>uitzien</i>	to look forward to
<i>verlangen</i>	to long for
<i>vertrekken</i>	to leave, depart for
<i>verwijzen</i>	to refer to
<i>vissen</i>	to fish for
<i>vragen</i>	to ask for s.o.
<i>werpen</i>	to throw at
<i>wijzen</i>	to point to
<i>zenden</i> ²⁹	to send to
<i>zoeken</i>	to look for (<i>naar</i> optional)

<i>smeken</i>	to plead for
<i>soebatten</i>	to implore, beseech for
<i>treuren</i>	to grieve, weep for
<i>verzoeken</i>	to ask for s.t., request
<i>vragen</i>	to ask for s.t.
<i>wenen (lit.)</i>	to cry, weep for

onder

<i>lijden</i>	to suffer under, by (eg. a regime)
---------------	------------------------------------

op

<i>aandringen</i>	to insist on
<i>zich abonneren</i>	to subscribe to
<i>antwoorden</i>	to answer to (a question)
<i>zich beroepen op</i>	to appeal to
<i>berusten</i>	to be founded, based on
<i>drinken</i>	to drink to
<i>duiden</i>	to point to
<i>gokken</i>	to bet on
<i>kritiek hebben</i>	to be critical of
<i>betrekking hebben</i>	to refer to
<i>recht hebben</i>	to be entitled to
<i>hopen</i>	to hope for
<i>ingaan</i>	to go further into (a matter)
<i>jagen</i>	to hunt (after)
<i>kijken</i>	to look at (a watch, clock)
<i>komen</i>	to hit upon, think of (a name etc.)

<i>lijken</i>	to look like
<i>letten</i>	to pay attention to
<i>loeren</i>	to lie in wait for
<i>attent maken</i>	to draw one's attention to
<i>mikken</i>	to aim at
<i>neerkomen</i>	to boil down to
<i>passen</i>	to look after
<i>reageren</i>	to react to

over

<i>beschikken</i>	to have at one's disposal
<i>beslissen</i>	to decide on
<i>zich ergeren</i>	to get irritated at
<i>huilen</i>	to cry about
<i>klagen</i>	to complain about
<i>peinzen</i>	to think about, ponder on
<i>praten</i>	to talk about
<i>zich druk maken</i>	to get excited, make a fuss about
<i>mopperen</i>	to grumble about
<i>nadenken</i>	to think about

tegen

<i>glimlachen</i>	to smile at
<i>knikken</i>	to nod at
<i>opzien</i>	to look up to s.o., dread s.t.
<i>ruilen</i>	to exchange for

<i>rekenen</i>	to rely on
<i>richten</i>	to direct at
<i>schatten</i>	to value at
<i>schieten</i>	to shoot at
<i>staan</i>	to insist on
<i>storten</i>	to deposit in (an account)
<i>terugkomen</i>	to return to (a point, issue)
<i>zich toeleggen</i>	to apply o.s. to
<i>toepassen</i>	to apply to
<i>trakteren</i>	to treat to
<i>zich verheugen</i>	to look forward to, rejoice at
<i>zich verlaten</i>	to rely, depend on
<i>veroveren</i>	to conquer, capture from
<i>vertrouwen</i>	to rely, depend on
<i>vestigen</i>	to fix upon
<i>volgen</i>	to follow after, on
<i>zich voorbereiden</i>	to prepare for
<i>vuren</i>	to fire at
<i>vliegen</i>	to fly to (a country)
<i>wachten</i>	to wait for
<i>wedden</i>	to bet on
<i>wijzen</i>	to point to, out
<i>ja zeggen</i>	to say yes to

<i>oordelen</i>	to judge
<i>prakkezeren</i>	to think of
<i>(coll.) roddelen</i>	to gossip about
<i>zich schamen</i>	to be ashamed of
<i>schrijven</i>	to write about
<i>spreken</i>	to speak, talk about
<i>zich verheugen</i>	to rejoice at
<i>vertellen</i>	to tell about
<i>wenen</i>	to cry about

<i>spreken</i>	to speak to
<i>zich verzetten</i>	to resist
<i>vloeken</i>	to swear at
<i>zeggen</i>	to say to

²⁹ *schrijven, sturen, zenden aan* someone, but *naar* a country. One will also hear *naar* someone.

³⁰ to laugh at s.o. = *iemand uitlachen*.

tot (see note p. 189)

aansporen to incite, urge to
aanzetten to incite, urge to
behoren to belong to, be part of
bekeren to convert to
zich beperken to limit o.s. to
bidden tot to pray to
bijdragen to contribute to

uit

afleiden to infer from
bestaan to consist
drinken to drink from
komen to come from (a country)
ontstaan to arise, spring from

van

afhangen to depend on
afstammen to be descended from
balen to be fed up with
barsten to burst with
beroven to deprive of
beven to tremble with
bevrijden to liberate, free from
blozen to blush with
genieten to enjoy
houden to like
huiten to cry with
krioelen to swarm, teem with
leven live on

voor

bezijden to succumb, yield to
 (the enemy)
danken thank for
gelden to count for, be valid for
belangstelling to be interested in
hebben
zich hoeden to beware of, guard against
zich interesseren to be interested in
in aanmerking to be considered for
komen
zich in acht to be on one's guard against
nemen

dienen to do duty as, serve as
aanleiding geven to give cause for
kiezen to choose for, as
zich richten to apply to
toelaten to admit to (university)
veroordelen to condemn to
zich wenden to turn to s.o.

opmaken to gather,
 conclude from
verbannen to banish from
vertalen to translate from
voortvloeien to result from

ontsnappen to escape from
overtuigen to convince of
schrikken to be shocked by
stikken to suffocate from,
 swarm with
veranderen to change (one's opinion,
 intention)
verdenken to suspect of
verschillen to differ from
voorzien to supply with
wemelen to swarm, teem with
weten to know of

oppassen to look out for
slagen to pass (an exam)
zich uitgeven to pass off for, as
verslijten to take s.o. for
vrezen to be afraid of
waarschuwen to warn against
wijken to give way/yield to
zakken to fail (an exam)
bang zijn to be afraid of
zorgen to take care of, look after

Note on *met/mee, tot/toe* :

When verbs followed by *met* or *tot* govern a noun or pronominal object there is no complication.

Ik heb jouw moeder met de mijne vergeleken.
De vakbond heeft de mannen tot staken aangezet.

When the noun or pronoun is replaced by a pronominal *er, hier* or *daar* (see p. 56, 236) or the relative *waar* (see p. 63) the alternative forms *mee* and *toe* must be used.

Ik heb ze daarmee vergeleken.
Zij hebben ze ertoe aangespoord.
De pen waar ik de brief mee schreef, is kapot.

12 Conjunctions (*voegwoorden*)

The distinction between conjunctions and certain sorts of adverbs is sometimes difficult to make. This section deals thus with those words, whether they be classed as conjunctions or adverbs, that join two or more clauses in a sentence.

12.1 Co-ordinating conjunctions (*nevenschikkende voegwoorden*)

The main distinguishing feature of a co-ordinating conjunction in Dutch is that it does not have any effect on the word-order of the following clause.

<i>en</i> ¹	– and
<i>want</i> ²	– for, because
<i>of</i> ³	– or
<i>maar</i>	– but
<i>doch</i> (lit.) ⁵	– but, nevertheless
<i>dus</i> ⁴	– thus, therefore
<i>alleen</i> (lit.) ⁵	– only, but

Ik ben zeer arm maar ik heb toch een auto.

Kom je vandaag of kom je morgen?

Hij heeft het beloofd doch hij heeft het niet gedaan.

Notes

1 Note the following English conjunctive constructions with 'and' are avoided in Dutch.

We went and sat down.

We gingen zitten.

They then went and sang a song together.

Ze gingen toen samen een liedje zingen.

He is sitting outside (and) reading a book.

Hij zit buiten een boek te lezen.

2 The conjunction 'for' is rather formal in English and is usually replaced by 'because'; in Dutch the reverse is the case, however. A sentence such as 'he dropped the cup because it was hot' would usually be rendered as *hij liet het kopje vallen want het was heet*, although *omdat* plus subordinate word-order would be quite correct too. Note

that just as not all English 'because's can be 'for', so in Dutch not all *omdat's* can be *want*, i.e. when a compound sentence begins with the sub-ordinate clause, then 'because'/*omdat* must be used.

Because I felt ill I left the room.

Omdat ik me misselijk voelde, verliet ik de kamer.

3 In more formal speech or writing *of* is often replaced by *ofwel* or *oftewel* (lit.), particularly with the meaning 'or... either'.

eg. *Heb je iets gedaan om me te helpen? Oftewel je broer?*

The co-ordinating conjunction *of* is commonly found after negative clauses in which case it can be translated in various ways into English.

Het scheelde niet veel of hij was overreden.

He was very nearly run over.

Nauwelijks was ik thuis of ik moest weer weg.

I was hardly home when I had to leave again.

Het duurde niet lang of ze stopten vóór een groot ijzeren hek.

It wasn't long before they stopped in front of a large iron gate.

In addition *of* is used idiomatically in the following expressions to render 'approximately':

een stuk of tien about ten (pieces, books, apples etc.)

een man of acht about eight people

om een uur of acht at about eight o'clock

Note the expression *nou en of*:

Kun je lekker koffie zetten? Nou en of!

I certainly can/And how!

Het heeft veel geregend, niet waar? Nou en of!

It certainly has/And how!

Of can also be a subordinating conjunction with a further set of complex meanings (see p. 193).

4 *Dus* can act as an ordinary co-ordinating conjunction not affecting word-order, but can also cause inversion, in which case it acts as an adverbial conjunction.

Ruud bleef thuis dus Karel ging ook niet uit. (co-ordinating)

Ruud bleef thuis dus ging Karel ook niet uit. (adverbial)

Note, however, when *dus* is preceded by *en*, only the adverbial construction is possible.

eg. *Ruud bleef thuis en dus ging Karel ook niet uit.*

5 The co-ordinating conjunctions *doch* and *alleen* are usually replaced by the adverbial conjunctions *toch* and *alleen* in the spoken language (see p. 199).

12.2 Subordinating conjunctions (*onderschikkenae voegwoorden*)

There is a large number of such conjunctions, most of which are listed below. The distinguishing feature of these is that the verb of the dependent clause is sent to the end of that clause.

The following pitfalls with subordinating conjunctions should be noted.

Beware of the word-order when a subordinating conjunction governs two subordinate clauses which are joined by a co-ordinating conjunction.

I stayed home because I was sick and (because I) didn't want to go to the fair.

Ik bleef thuis, omdat ik ziek was en (omdat) niet naar de kermis wilde gaan.

How glad she was when she heard his voice and (when she) saw his face.

Wat was ze blij, toen zij zijn stem hoorde en (toen ze) zijn gezicht zag.

Our friends had told us (that) it was a very interesting place and (that) we could easily spend a few days there.

Onze kennissen hadden ons verteld, dat het een zeer interessante plaats was en (dat) we er makkelijk een paar dagen zouden kunnen doorbrengen.

When a co-ordinating conjunction is followed by a subordinating conjunction, the subordinating one governs the word-order of the following clause, but not that of the co-ordinating clause; the subject and verb of the following co-ordinate clause invert because the subordinate clause takes on the role of first idea.

Ik blijf thuis en omdat ik me misselijk voel, ga ik naar bed.

Sometimes a subordinate clause can be inserted into another, in which case one must remember to put the verb of the interrupted clause to the end when one returns to it.

Ik vind ook dat als je een andere taal leert, je gewoonlijk je eigen taal beter kunt begrijpen.

<i>dat</i> ¹	that
<i>voordat, voor</i> ²	before (see also p. 201)
<i>eerdat, eer</i> (lit.)	before
<i>nadat, na</i> ²	after (see also p. 201)
<i>totdat, tot</i>	until
<i>omdat</i> ³	because
<i>zodat</i> ⁴	so that (result)
<i>opdat</i> ⁴	so that (purpose)
<i>doordat</i>	by, because (see also p. 201)
<i>mede doordat</i>	also because
<i>in plaats van dat</i>	instead of (see also p. 201)
<i>zonder dat</i>	without (see also p. 201)

behalve dat
zodanig dat
vandaar dat
alsmede dat
inzover(re) dat

*zoals*⁸
*alsof*⁹
als^{2, 5, 6, 8, 9}
wanneer^{2, 6}
*toen*⁶
indien (lit.)⁵

daar (lit.)
aangezien
*terwijl*⁷
ofschoon
schoon (lit.)
(al)hoewel
sinds
sedert
nu
zodra
zolang
(voor)zover
gelijk (lit.)
evenals
evenmin als
tenzij
mits
vermits (lit.)
*of*⁹
*of dat*⁹
onverschillig of
*naar*¹⁰
naarmate
naar gelang
niettegenstaande
ingeval

except that
such that
for that reason, thus
as well as (the fact that)
to the extent that

(just) as
as if
when, if
when, whenever
when
if

since, because
since, because, seeing
while, whereas
although

since (temporal)

now that
as soon as
as long as
as far as
just as (= *net zoals*)

just as little as, no more than
unless
provided that
whereas, since
whether
or whether
regardless of whether
as
as
as
notwithstanding that
in case, in the event (that)

The following is a list of commonly used phrases/clauses that introduce subordinate clauses:

<i>daar staat tegenover dat</i>	on the other hand
<i>stel/veronderstel/gesteld (lit.) dat</i>	let's say/assume (that)
<i>tegen de tijd dat</i>	by the time (that)
<i>dat neemt niet weg dat</i>	that does not alter the fact that
<i>dat wil (niet) zeggen dat</i>	that means (doesn't mean) that
<i>dat maakt dat</i>	that means that, has as a result that
<i>gezien het feit dat</i>	as, in the light of the fact that
<i>ondanks het feit dat</i>	in spite of the fact that
<i>voor het geval dat</i>	in case
<i>daar komt (nog) bij dat</i>	in addition
<i>laat staan dat/als/wanneer</i>	let alone that/if/when
<i>'t toeval wilde dat</i>	chance would have it that
<i>met dien verstande dat</i>	on the understanding that

Notes

1 *dat*

Note that 'that' is often omitted in English but never in Dutch.

He said he would come.

He zei dat hij komen zou.

The first time she said it.

De eerste keer dat ze het zei.

In uncultivated speech a superfluous *dat* is sometimes used after other subordinate conjunctions and interrogative adverbs in indirect questions.

Ik weet niet waar dat ze wonen.

I don't know where they live.

Nu dat ik rijk ben, ...

Now (that) I am rich, ...

It is, for example, very common after *naarmate*, *naar gelang* and *niettegenstaande*.

A rather idiomatic usage of *dat* is the following:

Een stank dat er was!

There was a terrible smell!

En eten dat hij kan!

How he can eat!

Note also the use of *dat* in the following instances where it could be confused with the relative pronoun:

De tweede keer dat hij kwam.

The second time he came.

Dit is een pot uit de tijd dat er nog geen blanken hier leefden.

This is a pot from the time that/before there were any whites living here.

2 The conjunctions *voordat* and *nadat* are commonly preceded by *kort* (shortly before/after), *daags* (the day before/after) and *lang* (long before/after).

Wanneer and *als* (meaning 'when') are commonly preceded by *pas* (only when), *zelfs* (even when) and *vooral* (especially when).

3 For substitution of *omdat* with *want* see p. 190.

4 In colloquial Dutch the subtle distinction between *zodat* and *opdat* is often ignored and *zodat* is used in both senses.

Het heeft de hele dag geregend zodat we niet uit konden gaan.

De regering heeft het bedrag van de steun verhoogd opdat de armsten geen honger zullen lijden.

5 As in English, *als/indien* (if) in conditional sentences can be omitted in higher style and the clause can begin with the verb; the main clause is then always introduced by *dan*.

Had he come, we could have done it./If he had come, we could have done it.

Was hij gekomen, dan hadden wij het kunnen doen./Als hij gekomen was, hadden wij het kunnen doen.

Should war come, then we'll leave Germany./If war comes, we'll leave Germany.

Komt er oorlog, dan zullen we Duitsland verlaten./Als er oorlog komt, zullen we Duitsland verlaten.

6 The translation of English 'when' into Dutch is a complex issue. There are three words: *wanneer*, *als*, *toen*.

Wanneer is always used in interrogative clauses both direct and indirect.

Wanneer komt hij thuis? Ik weet niet wanneer hij thuiskomt.

It is also used to translate 'when' in subordinate clauses when the verb is in the present, future or perfect tense. In this case it can be substituted by *als*.

Wanneer (als) het regent, wil ik thuis blijven.

It can only be used in a clause with the verb in the imperfect or pluperfect when it

means 'whenever', otherwise *toen* is used (see below). This *wanneer* can also be replaced by *als*.

Wanneer (als) hij thuiskwam was ik altijd boos op hem.

Als, apart from replacing *wanneer* in instances such as the above, also renders 'if' (not the 'if' which means 'whether', see *of*), in which case an ambiguity can arise.

Als het regent, wil ik thuis blijven.

When/if it rains, ...

See 9 below for *als* as an abbreviation of *alsof*. See Prepositions for *als* as a preposition (p. 206).

Toen replaces *wanneer/als* when the verb is in the imperfect or the pluperfect, i.e. when the meaning is 'when on one occasion'. *Wanneer/als* are, however, used when the verb is in the imperfect or the pluperfect and the meaning is 'whenever', i.e. 'when on repeated occasions'.

Toen hij thuiskwam, was ik al weg.

Compare: *Wanneer (als) hij thuiskwam, was ik altijd al weg.*

Ik heb de brief meteen gepost toen ik hem geschreven had.

Note: There is also an adverb *toen* (then) which should not be confused with the conjunction *toen* (when). (see p. 105)

Toen ging hij weg.

He then left.

Toen hij wegging, ...

When he left, ...

7 *Terwijl* often helps one out of certain difficult English verbal -ing constructions. (see p. 169)

Walking around in town I bumped into him.

Terwijl ik in de stad rondliep, ben ik hem tegengekomen.

8 *Als* as a subordinating conjunction has a variety of meanings:

'when, whenever' (see note 6 above)

'if', in which case it can be omitted (see note 5 and 6 above)

'as long as', in which case it replaces *zolang*.

Het kan me niet schelen hoe, als je het maar doet.

I don't care how, so long as you do it.

'as', in which case it can be confused with *zoals* – not a common usage.

Als volgt. – As follows.

'than', used after comparatives (often followed by simple nouns and pronouns rather than clauses). In this sense it is considered rather colloquial and should be replaced by *dan*.

Hij is groter als (dan) ik.

Hij deed het beter als (dan) ik het had kunnen doen.

Als also can be used as an adverbial conjunction replacing the subordinating conjunction *alsof*.

Hij deed als hoorde hij me niet.

He pretended he didn't hear me.

(*doen alsof* renders 'to pretend')

Ze liepen als vreesden zij voor hun leven.

They were walking as if they were afraid for their lives.

Also:

Toen lachte hij als om zich te verontschuldigen.

Then he laughed as if to apologise.

Als can also be a preposition meaning 'as':

Als kind werkte ik in een goudmijn.

As a child I worked in a gold mine.

Ik gebruikte het als asbak.

I used it as an ashtray.

Zich gedragen als een heer.

To behave as (like) a gentleman.

Iemand erkennen als koning.

To recognize someone as king.

Zoals can only be used as a subordinate conjunction whereas *als* has both adverbial and prepositional functions in addition to that of a conjunction.

(such) as, in such a way as

Hij zong zoals hij nog nooit gezongen heeft.

He sang (such) as he has never sung before.

as

Zoals je weet, ga ik ook mee.

As you know, I'm going too.

Net zoals ik gezegd heb, ...

Just as I said, ...

'as, like'

Je moet doen zoals wij.

You should do as (like) we (do).

Hij heeft al zijn geld in de oorlog verloren zoals zoveel anderen.

He lost all his money in the war like so many others.

9 *Alsof* – as if

Very often the *als* is dropped and *of* maintains the full meaning of 'as if'.

Het ziet er naar uit of het gaat regenen.

It looks as if it is going to rain.

Somewhat less common is just *als* meaning *alsof* but in this case *als* acts as an adverbial conjunction.

Hij deed als hoorde hij het niet.

He pretended (acted as if) he didn't hear it.

Of as a subordinating conjunction can mean:

whether (note that 'or whether' is *of dat* to avoid a double *of*)

'as if', in which case it replaces *alsof* (see above)

It is often used superfluously after interrogative adverbs and pronouns in indirect questions (see p. 203) in much the same way as *dat* is sometimes used (see p. 194, 203). This practice should not be copied.

Ik weet niet wat of ze kan doen.

I don't know what she can do.

Note the following example which contains both a superfluous *of* and *dat*: *ik weet niet wie of dat er zal komen* – I don't know who will come.

For further uses of *of* see the footnote to *of* as a co-ordinate conjunction.

10 *Naar* is only found in higher style and usually in set expressions.

Naar ik meen.

As I believe.

Duidelijk is het, naar ik meen, dat het een mengtaal is.

It is clear, I believe, that it is a mixed language.

Naar men zegt.

It is said.

Naar verluidt.

It is rumoured.

12.3 Adverbial conjunctions

Grammatically speaking these words are adverbs but they often function as conjunctions introducing clauses. Their adverbial qualities are, however, obvious from the word-order which follows, i.e. inversion of subject and verb so that the verb remains the second idea (the adverb being the first).

*alleen*¹

only

*dus*¹

thus, hence, for that reason

daarom

thus, hence, for that reason

vandaar

thus, hence, for that reason

daarvandaan

thus, hence, for that reason

toch

nevertheless, but, however

*al*²

even if

ook al

even if

*als*³

as if

anders

otherwise

desondanks

in spite of it/that

intussen

meantime, -while

inmiddels

meantime, -while

integendeel

on the contrary

*dan*⁴

then

Examples:

Al had hij het gedaan, ik had er toch niets van gehoord.

Hij zag eruit als had hij dagenlang niet geslapen.

Hij heeft het beloofd toch heeft hij het niet gedaan. (compare p. 191)

Notes

1 *Alleen* and *dus* can also be co-ordinating (see p. 190).

2 *Al* in this sense is synonymous with *zelfs als* which is subordinating.

3 *Als* here is the same as *alsof* which is subordinating (see p. 198).

4 This *dan* is used after particular *als* clauses with the conditional tense. (see p. 195)

12.4 Correlative conjunctions

Correlative conjunctions are couplets of conjunctions that correlate two clauses of a sentence, i.e. each clause begins with a conjunction that forms a sense pair with the other. They can be classified as follows:

- 1 those that act as co-ordinating conjunctions in both parts of the sentence
- 2 those that act as adverbial conjunctions in both parts of the sentence
- 3 a few that don't fit into groups 1 or 2

12.4.1 CO-ORDINATING CORRELATIVE CONJUNCTIONS

<i>hetzij... of</i> (<i>óf</i>)... <i>óf</i> (<i>noch</i>)... <i>noch</i> ¹ <i>zowel... als</i> (<i>ook</i> ²) (<i>èn</i>)... <i>èn</i> <i>niet alleen... maar ook</i> ³	either... or neither... nor both... and both... and (less common) not only... but also
--	--

*Hetzij hij komt morgen of hij komt niet./Hij komt hetzij morgen of niet.
(Of) je doet het goed, óf je doet het helemaal niet.
Zowel de hoogleraar als(ook²) de student hebben het boek gelezen.
(En) de leraar èn de leerlingen mogen gratis naar binnen.
Niet alleen de leraar heeft het boek gelezen maar ook de student.³*

Notes

1 *Noch... noch*

*Noch mijn broer noch mijn vriend kon me helpen.
Ik heb noch gegeten noch gedronken.*

When only one *noch* is used the verb is usually in the plural because it resembles *en* in meaning.

Mijn broer noch mijn vriend konden me helpen.

An English construction such as 'He may not stay here nor may he go home' is simplified in Dutch to *Hij mag niet hier blijven en hij mag ook niet naar huis*.

2 Inclusion of *ook* is considered rather archaic these days.

3 See also p. 201.

Niet alleen heeft hij het boek al gelezen maar hij heeft het al teruggegeven.

12.4.2 ADVERBIAL CORRELATIVE CONJUNCTIONS

In this case the finite verb in each part of the sentence follows the conjunction.

<i>nu... dan</i> <i>nu eens... dan weer</i> <i>de ene keer... de andere keer</i> <i>enerzijds... anderzijds</i> <i>aan de ene kant... aan de andere kant</i> <i>deels... deels</i> <i>ten dele... ten dele</i> <i>gedeeltelijk... gedeeltelijk</i>	one moment... the next on the one hand... on the other partly... partly
---	---

Nu zie je het wel, dan zie je het niet.

Enerzijds wil hij werken, anderzijds wil hij nog blijven studeren.

12.4.3 There are four correlative conjunctions that are at odds with the patterns described in group 1 and 2.

Notes

1 *nauwelijks... of* scarcely/hardly... when

The first half acts as an adverb, the second as a co-ordinate conjunction. This rather idiomatic use of co-ordinate *of* has other parallels (see p. 191).

Nauwelijks was ik thuis of mijn vader belde me op.

2 *niet alleen... maar ook* not only... but

As with 1, the first half acts as an adverb, the second as a co-ordinate conjunction. There is, however, also a similar co-ordinate correlative conjunction (see p. 200).

Niet alleen heeft hij het boek verloren maar hij heeft me er ook niet voor betaald.

3 *hoe... des te* the... the
hoe... hoe

Although synonymous, these two correlative couplets require a different word order:

hoe... des te (sub. conj. + adv. conj.)

hoe... hoe (sub. conj. + sub. conj.)

Hoe meer je studeert des te meer zul je weten.

Hoe meer je studeert hoe meer je weten zult.

12.5 Conjunctions introducing infinitive clauses

Infinitive clauses contain no finite verb but rather an infinitive preceded by *te*; at the beginning of the clause stands one of the following conjunctions. Only the word *teneinde* is used exclusively as a conjunction in infinitive clauses; all the other words have other functions as well.

<i>om</i> ¹ <i>teneinde</i> (lit.) <i>alvorens</i> ² (lit.) <i>na</i> ² <i>door</i> ³ <i>in plaats van</i> ⁴ <i>zonder</i> <i>van</i>	in order to (see p. 157) in order to before after by instead of without from
---	---

Hij ging naar huis om zijn fiets te halen.

He went home (in order) to fetch his bike.

Teneinde moeilijkheden te voorkomen wordt men vriendelijk verzocht dieren buiten te laten.

(In order) to avoid difficulties, you are kindly requested to leave animals outside.

Door dat te doen bereik je niets.

By doing that, you will accomplish nothing.

Na urenlang gewerkt te hebben, ben ik naar de bioscoop gegaan.

After having worked for hours I went to the cinema.

Men wordt vriendelijk verzocht zijn sigaret te doven alvorens de bioscoop in te gaan.

You are kindly requested to extinguish your cigarette before entering the cinema.

Notes

1 For use of *te* with or without *om* see p. 154, 157.

2 *Alvorens* and *na* + infinitive clause can always be replaced by *voordat* and *nadat* + subordinate clause, as in English.

Nadat ik urenlang had gewerkt, ging ik naar de bioscoop.

After I had worked for hours I went to the cinema.

3 In uncultivated speech *door* is often replaced by *met*.

Met van een ladder te vallen, kun je je been breken.

4 *In plaats van* and *zonder* differ in usage from *in plaats van dat* and *zonder dat*: when the subject of both clauses is the same, the infinitive clause construction must be used; when the subjects are different, however, the appropriate subordinating conjunction must be used.

Hij ging weg zonder een woord te zeggen.

Hij kwam binnen zonder dat ik hem zag.

In plaats van op te staan, bleef hij zitten.

Ik moet het alleen doen in plaats van dat mijn broer me helpt.

12.6 Interrogative adverbs and pronouns introducing indirect questions

Although these words are not strictly speaking conjunctions, they function nevertheless as subordinating conjunctions (see p. 72, 109).

<i>wat</i>	what
<i>wanneer</i>	when
<i>waarom</i>	why
<i>wie</i>	who
<i>welk(e)</i>	which
<i>hoe</i>	how
<i>hoeveel</i>	how much
<i>in hoever(re)</i>	to what extent
<i>waar</i>	where
<i>waar... heen</i>	where... to
<i>waar... vandaan</i>	where... from
<i>waar + prep.</i>	(see Relative pronouns, p. 63)

Question: *Wat heeft hij in zijn hand?*

Answer: *Ik weet niet wat hij in zijn hand heeft.*

Question: *Waar komt ze vandaan?*

Answer: *Ik weet niet waar ze vandaan komt.*

Question: *Welke boeken hebben ze gelezen?*

Hij vroeg welke boeken ze gelezen hadden.

Ik weet niet in hoeverre dat mogelijk zal zijn.

Note: Often a superfluous subordinating *of* or *dat* is used after these words in colloquial speech. The practice should be avoided. (see also p. 198)

Ik vroeg me af hoe of ze dat had kunnen doen.

Ik weet niet waar of ze de bruiloft willen houden.

Kun je me zeggen waar dat hij woont?

The same words are used as subordinating conjunctions in combination with *ook* to express 'whoever', 'wherever' etc. (see p. 69)

<i>wie... ook</i>	whoever
<i>waar... ook</i>	wherever
<i>wat... ook</i>	whatever
<i>hoe... ook</i>	however ¹
<i>welk(e)... ook</i>	whichever

1 Note that the English adverb 'however' is *echter*.

Hij heeft het echter niet kunnen doen.

He wasn't able to do it, however.

Wie het ook gedaan heeft, het kan me niet schelen.

Het zal hem goed gaan waar hij ook woont.

Welk boek je ook maar leest, is goed.

In addition to the above one will hear *wie dan ook*, *waar dan ook* etc. Such expressions must not be confused with the interrogative conjunctions. They are used as follows:

Hij kan het beter dan wie (dan) ook.

He can do it better than anyone.

Hoe dan ook ga ik er eentje vinden.

Somehow I am going to find one.

Hij moet ergens wonen waar dan ook.

He has to live somewhere, anywhere.

(wherever it may be)

13 Prepositions (*voorzetsels/preposities*)

Because prepositions are the most idiomatic part of speech, each with a vast number of meanings in many cases, the following list can only serve as a guide to the usage of Dutch prepositions. To have listed English prepositions with their various translations into Dutch would have been unwieldy and the student would have been prevented from getting a feeling for the nuances of Dutch prepositions. By doing the reverse it is hoped a certain pattern in the usage of individual Dutch prepositions will emerge and facilitate the learning of such. It will be noted that they are often used as adverbs too. Only the most usual or basic meanings of each preposition in English are given next to the Dutch form.

à – to, at

drie à vier weken

three to four weeks

à 5%

at five percent

à f 10 per stuk

at ten guilders each

aan – on, at

This preposition is often confused by English speakers with *op*. In as far as its meaning can be defined at all, one can say that a vertical 'on' is rendered by *aan* (a horizontal 'on' by *op*, however) and 'on' or 'at' the edge of things is also *aan*.

het schilderij aan de muur

the picture on the wall

aan het plafond

on the ceiling

geen ster aan de hemel

no star in the sky

iemand aan de deur

somebody at the door

een klop aan (op) de deur

a knock at the door

aan de kust

on the coast

aan zee (compare op)

at the seaside

aan het strand (compare op)

at the beach

aan land gaan

to go on land

aan tafel (compare op)

at the table

aan de Rijn

on the Rhine

mijn huis staat aan (op) een gracht

my house is on a canal

aan de linkerkant

on the left-hand side

aan de telefoon

on the telephone

jij bent aan de beurt

it is your turn

aan het begin/einde
 ik ben hard aan het werk
 aan de universiteit (compare op)
 wat had zij voor kleren aan?
 ik heb een gouden ring aan (see om)
 de lamp/het fornuis is aan
 blind aan een oog
 doof aan een oor
 een gebrek aan
 een behoefte aan
 ze weten niet wat ze aan je hebben
 hoeveel heb je aan belasting betaald?
 f 2000 aan sieraden
 ik herkende hem aan (door) zijn stem
 verbeteringen aan het huis
 ik kan er niets aan doen
 ik heb er niets aan

at the beginning/end
 I am hard at work
 at the university (i.e. studying there)
 what sort of clothes did she have on?
 I have a golden ring on
 the light/stove is on
 blind in one eye
 deaf in one ear
 a lack of
 a need for
 they don't know what you're worth
 what did you pay in tax?
 f 2000 in jewels
 I recognised him by his voice
 improvements to the house
 I can do nothing about it
 it's useless to me

achter – behind, after

achter het huis
 hij zit de hele dag achter zijn bureau
 ik heb het volk achter me
 de deur achter zich sluiten
 mijn horloge loopt achter
 schrijf M.A. achter je naam
 tien achter elkaar

behind the house
 he sits at his desk all day
 I have the people behind me
 to close the door behind one
 my watch is slow
 write M.A. after your name
 ten in a row

afgezien van – apart from, except for

afgezien daarvan
 afgezien van mijn broer

apart from that
 apart from my brother

aldus – according to (see *volgens*)

Found in journalese and formal style. It can only be followed by a noun or name; if a clause follows the noun, *volgens* is used.

..., aldus de minister-president

according to the prime minister,
 the prime minister said

als – as (see conjunctions)

Note that the indefinite article is often not used after *als*
 als kind
 ik wil het als asbak gebruiken
 zich gedragen als een dame

as a child
 I want to use it as an ashtray
 to behave like a lady

behalve – except (for)

wie gaat behalve ik (subj. pronoun)
 wie zag je behalve hem (obj. pron.)
 behalve in de zomer
 behalve mijn moeder gaat ook mijn oma

who is going apart from me
 whom did you see apart from him
 except (for) in summer
 as well as my mother my grandma is
 going to

beneden – beneath, under

beneden mijn waardigheid
 dat is beneden me
 beneden de Moerdijk
 beneden de veertig

beneath my dignity
 that is beneath me
 south of the Moerdijk
 under forty

bij – by, near, at

Often preceded by *vlak/dicht* to render English 'near'. (see p. 93)

vlak bij het stadhuis
 bij het postkantoor
 ik woon bij (aan) het water
 hij heeft geen geld bij zich
 ik woon bij mijn tante
 ik kom zo bij u
 wij horen bij elkaar
 iemand bij zijn naam roepen
 iemand bij de hand nemen
 bij de tandarts, groenteboer
 ik heb het bij V en D gekocht
 bij mooi weer
 bij een oostelijke wind
 bij honderden
 twee bij drie meter
 de slag bij Waterloo
 bij het ontbijt
 wenst u een koekje bij de koffie?
 doe een kaartje bij de bloemen
 les nemen bij iemand
 bij uitstek
 examen doen bij iemand

near the town hall
 near the post-office
 I live near the water
 he has no money on him
 I live at my aunt's/with my aunt
 I'll be with you in a moment
 we are/belong together
 to call someone by name
 to take someone by the hand
 at the dentist's, greengrocer's
 I bought it at V & D (a shop)
 when the weather is nice
 when an easterly is blowing
 by the hundreds
 two by three metres
 the Battle of Waterloo
 at breakfast
 do you want a biscuit with your coffee?
 put a card in with the flowers
 to have lessons from someone
 par excellence
 to do an exam for someone (i.e. a
 particular teacher)
 I read it in Dickens
 I'm insured with Tiel-Utrecht
 to work for a firm

bij een bezoek aan het museum
bij nader inzien
bij zichzelf denken
bij het raam/vuur zitten
bij de volgende halte uitstappen

binnen – within, in(side)

binnen het huis
binnen een week
binnen het bestek van dit boek

boven – above, over

boven de waterspiegel
je vliegt urenlang boven Australië
het ging boven mijn pet
Zaandam ligt boven Amsterdam
hij is boven de 50
ik geef de voorkeur aan een V.W. boven
alle andere auto's

buiten – out of, beyond

buiten de stad
buiten gevaar
buiten beschouwing laten
buiten mijn competentie
ik kan niet buiten hem (see zonder)
buiten haar bestond er niets voor hem
(see behalve)

dank zij – thanks to

dank zij jou
dank zij het mooie weer

door – through, by (see also p. 161)

door heel Nederland
door de week
hij liep (dwars) door het bos
door (een) rood licht (heen) rijden
het is door haar geschreven
ik heb hem door Anneke leren kennen

on a visit to the museum
 on closer examination
 to think to oneself
 to sit by the window/fire
 to get out at the next stop

inside the house
 within a week
 within the scope of this book

above water level
 you fly over Australia for hours
 it was above my head, beyond me
 Z'dam is north of A'dam
 he's over fifty
 I prefer a V.W. to all other cars

out of town
 out of danger
 to leave out of consideration
 beyond my competence
 I can't do without him
 apart from her nothing existed for him

thanks to you
 thanks to the nice weather

throughout Holland
 during the week
 he walked (right) through the forest
 to drive through a red light
 it was written by her
 I got to know him through Anneke

door en door stom
door en door een dame

gedurende – during (see *tijdens*)

gedurende het weekeinde
hij was gedurende 3 weken ziek (formal)

in – in, into

hij zit in zijn auto
ben je ooit in Engeland geweest?
in het Nederlands etc.
vertaal dit in het Frans
in het algemeen (see over)
5 meter in de breedte
in de bus, tram, trein
hij zit in een boek te lezen
hij heeft zich in de vinger gesneden
de slang heeft in zijn been gebeten
in een boom klimmen
in tweeën snijden
er gaan 16 ons in een Engels pond
hij is in de zestig
er waren in de 50 mensen
in het weekend

jegens (lit.) – to(wards)

onze plicht jegens onze ouders
eerlijk zijn jegens mensen

krachtens (lit.) – by virtue of

krachtens deze wet
krachtens mijn ambt

langs – along, past

langs het kanaal
ik reed langs jouw huis
langs een andere route/weg (see via)
kom een keer bij me langs

very stupid
 a real lady

during the weekend
 he was sick for 3 weeks

he is in his car
 have you ever been to England?
 in Dutch etc.
 translate this into French
 in general, generally
 five metres wide
 on the bus, tram, train
 he's reading a book
 he cut his finger
 the snake bit his leg
 to climb a tree
 to cut into two
 there are 16 ounces to an English pound
 he's in his sixties
 there were fifty odd people
 at the weekend

our duty to our parents
 to be honest with people

under this law
 by virtue of my position/office

along the canal
 I drove past your house
 via another route/road
 come and visit me some time

met – with

we waren met z'n tweeën
met de post
met de auto, tram etc.
met dit weer
met potlood schrijven
met Pasen, Kerstmis
ik ben met vakantie (see op)
een zak met geld
met of zonder (mayonaise)

there were two of us
 by mail
 by car, tram etc.
 in this weather
 to write in pencil
 at Easter, Christmas time
 I'm on holidays
 a bag of money
 with or without (mayonnaise – when
 buying chips)

When used with pronominal *er* (p. 189, 236) or as a prefix with separable verbs (p. 180) *met* becomes *mee*. In formal style it also occurs as *mede* in separable verbs, eg. *mededelen* = *meedelen* – to inform.

na – after

na het avondeten
na achten
A. is de grootste stad na Londen
op twee na de grootste stad
na ontvangst van
de een na de ander
regel na regel

after dinner
 after eight
 after London A. is the biggest city
 the third largest city
 on receipt of
 one after another
 rule after rule

naar – to (places), (see *aan*)

ik ga naar A'dam
ik ga naar huis
ik ga naar boven, beneden, binnen,
buiten
naar bed
naar school (see op)
naar Parijs vertrekken
een steen naar iemand/iets gooien
naar iets grijpen
hij werd naar zijn vader genoemd
naar mijn mening
een film naar een roman van Dickens

I'm going to A'dam
 I'm going home
 I'm going upstairs, downstairs, inside,
 outside
 to bed
 to school
 to leave for Paris
 to throw a stone at s.o./s.t.
 to grab at s.t.
 he was named after his father
 in my opinion
 a film of a book by Dickens

naast – next to

hij woont naast mij
naast borduren doet ze ook veel aan
haken

he lives next to me
 apart from embroidery she also does a
 lot of crochet

namens – on behalf of

ik spreek namens alle aanwezigen

I speak on behalf of all those present

niettegenstaande – in spite of (see *ondanks*)

niettegenstaande het slechte weer

in spite of the bad weather

om – around, for

we zaten allemaal om de tafel
om de hoek
de aarde draait om zijn as
ik kan de kinderen niet om me hebben
om zich (heen) kijken
om tien uur
om de twee weken
om de andere boom
de tijd is om
ik heb een gordel/stropdas/halsketting om
oog om oog, tand om tand
om welke reden
niet om mijzelf maar om jou

we all sat around the table
 around the corner
 the earth turns on its axis
 I can't have the kids around me
 to look around (oneself)
 at ten o'clock
 every two weeks
 every other/second tree
 time is up
 I have a belt/tie/necklace on
 an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth
 for what reason
 not for/because of myself but for/
 because of you

ondanks – in spite of

ondanks zijn ziekte
desondanks

in spite of his illness
 in spite of it/that

onder – under

onder het huis
bekend onder een andere naam
onder Koning Willem I
onder mijn voorganger
onder de Duitse bezetting
onder ons blijven
je bent onder vrienden
onder andere
onder het avondeten
onder het lezen ontdekte hij...
een dorpje onder A'dam
hij is onder de 40
onder de 50 minuten

under(neath) the house
 well-known under another name
 under King William I
 under my predecessor
 during the German occupation
 to remain between us
 you're among friends
 among other things
 during dinner
 while reading he discovered...
 a village south of A'dam
 he is under forty
 under 50 minutes

2 *ongeacht* – regardless of

ongeacht het land van oorsprong

regardless of one's land of origin

op – on

In its basic meaning of 'on' Dutch *op* designates a horizontal 'on' (see *aan* for vertical 'on'). Otherwise its meanings are too diverse to define.

<i>op (de) tafel</i>	on the table
<i>op school</i>	at school
<i>op (het) kantoor</i>	at the office
<i>op zee</i>	at sea
<i>op het platteland</i>	in the country
<i>op de hoek</i>	on the corner
<i>op de universiteit (see aan)</i>	at the university (i.e. the campus)
<i>op de gang (also in)</i>	in the hall
<i>op de bank/markt</i>	at the bank/market
<i>op het postkantoor/station</i>	at the postoffice/station
<i>op het strand (see aan)</i>	on the beach
<i>op de voor-, achtergrond</i>	in the fore-, background
<i>het op één na grootste schip ter wereld</i>	the second largest ship in the world
<i>op de foto</i>	in the photo
<i>op het spitsuur</i>	at rush-hour
<i>hij werkt op een fabriek</i>	he's working in a factory
<i>ik woon op een kamer in de stad</i>	I live in a room in town
<i>op een feest</i>	at a party
<i>op een eiland</i>	on an island
<i>op IJsland, Java, Kreta</i>	in Iceland, Java, Crete (i.e. islands)
<i>op het tweede plaatje</i>	in the second picture
<i>iemand op de koffie uitnodigen</i>	to invite s.o. to coffee
<i>iemand op een bruiloft uitnodigen</i>	to invite s.o. to a wedding
<i>iemand op een diner uitnodigen</i>	to invite s.o. to dinner
<i>hij had maar 5 cent op zak</i>	he only had five cents on him
<i>op vakantie (also met)</i>	on holidays
<i>op deze manier/wijze</i>	in this way
<i>op zoek naar</i>	in search of
<i>op afbetaling kopen</i>	to hire-purchase
<i>een aanval op</i>	an attack on
<i>een toast op de koningin</i>	a toast to the queen
<i>hij ligt op sterven</i>	he is dying
<i>op z'n Frans etc.</i>	à la française etc.
<i>op z'n vroegst/laatst</i>	at the earliest/latest
<i>op de maat van de muziek</i>	in tune to the music

op een wenk van mij

op de radio/t.v.

op één voorwaarde

als kind heb ik op klompen gelopen

ze kookt op gas

op de fiets (also met)

op een hoogte van 2000 meter

een op de 50 (mensen etc.)

één telefoon op elke 50 inwoners

mijn auto rijdt een op 10

op twintigjarige leeftijd

(op) de 23e

mijn geld is op

er is geen geld op de rekening

over – over, via, about

het vliegtuig vliegt over de stad (heen)

tranen liepen over zijn wangen

er waren over de 100 mensen

overdag

hij is over de 60

het is al over achten

vrijdag over een week

over 50 jaar

over het algemeen (also in)

een boek/film over iets

dit boek gaat over de oorlog

je moet er niet over praten

de film is over

ik heb wat over

per – by, per

per post/trein/tram etc. (see met)

5 keer per seconde/uur/jaar

ze worden per dozijn verkocht

qua – as, as far as ... is concerned

hoe vind je dit boek qua presentatie

qua aantal deelnemers was het een succes

2 at a sign from me

on the radio/T.V.

on one condition

as a child I used to wear clogs

she cooks with gas

by bike

at a height of 2000 metres

one in every fifty (people etc.)

one phone to every 50 inhabitants

my car does 10 to the litre

at the age of twenty

on the 23rd

my money has all gone

there is no money in the account

the plane is flying above the city (over)

tears ran down his cheeks

there were over 100 people

during the day

he's over 60

it's already past eight o'clock

a week from Friday

in fifty years' time

in general, generally

a book/film about something

this book is about the war

you mustn't talk about it

the film is over

I have something left

by mail/train/tram etc.

five times a second/hour/year

they are sold by the dozen

what do you think of this book as far as

its presentation is concerned

as far as numbers go, it was a success

rond, rondom – around

rond het vuur around the fire
hij liep rond het huis (heen) he ran around the house
rondom de stad loopt een singel a moat runs around the city

sedert – since, for (see *sinds*)

sedert 12 mei since the twelfth of May
sedert enige tijd for some time

sinds – since, for (see *sedert*)

sinds de oorlog since the war
sinds lange tijd for a long time

te – at, in (also *ter, ten* in set expressions, see p. 218)

For use with *om* before infinitives see p. 157.

te Amsterdam (lit.) in Amsterdam
te paard by horse, on horseback
te koop for sale
je hebt f 10 te goed you have f 10 to your credit
en terecht and rightly so
een schip te water laten to launch a ship
te voorschijn komen to appear
te binnen schieten to occur (to s.o.)

tegen – against

Ajax speelt tegen Feijenoord A. is playing against F. (sport)
tegen de muur against the wall
met mijn rug tegen de muur with my back to the wall
tegen 8% rente at 8% interest
tegen die prijs at that price
het is duizend tegen één a thousand to one (odds)
tegen acht uur at about eight o'clock
hij is tegen de 50 he is about 50
ik kan er niet tegen I can't stand it; it upsets me
ik heb er niets tegen I don't object (to it)

tegenover – opposite

hij woont tegenover een bank he lives opposite a bank
recht/schuin tegenover directly/diagonally opposite

er zijn 900 overleden in 1977 tegenover 900 died in 1977 as against/opposed to
1200 in 1978 1200 in 1978
hij is verlegen tegenover dames he is shy with ladies
dat kun je niet doen tegenover je ouders you can't do that to your parents

tijdens – during (see *gedurende*)

tot – until (see p. 189)

wij gaan tot Amsterdam we are going as far as Amsterdam
tot nu toe, tot dusver up till now
tot drie keer toe up to three times
tot diep in de nacht until late at night
ze werden tot de laatste man gedood they were all killed to the last man
tot ziens good-bye (till we see each other again)
tot en met up to and including
tot elke prijs at any price
tot mijn verbazing/vreugde to my amazement/joy
iemand overhalen tot stelen/meegaan to talk s.o. into stealing/going along

tussen – between

tussen de twee bomen between the two trees
tussen 3 en 4 uur between 3 and 4 o'clock
dat blijft tussen ons that must stay between you and me
je moet kiezen tussen... you must choose between...

uit – out, out of, from

uit een glas drinken to drink from a glass
hij komt uit Edam/België he comes from Edam/Belgium
hij is uit het dorp verdwenen he disappeared from the village
uit de 15e eeuw from the fifteenth century
ik deed het uit liefdadigheid I did it for the sake of charity
uit wraak/jaloezie/vrees out of revenge/jealousy/fear
uit eigen ervaring from one's own experience
uit het Nederlands vertalen to translate from Dutch
we gaan een dagje uit we are going out for a day
de verloving is uit the engagement is over
de kachel/het licht is uit the heater/light is off
heb je het boek al uit have you finished the book

van – of, from, off

Usually written with a small letter in people's names, eg. *H. van den Berg*. (see p. 16)

<i>hij is net van A'dam gekomen</i>	he has just come from A'dam
<i>de auto van mijn oom</i>	my uncle's car
<i>een tante van mij</i>	an aunt of mine
<i>een vriend van mijn moeder</i>	a friend of my mother's
<i>van het dak vallen</i>	to fall off the roof
<i>van 1970 tot 1975</i>	from 1970 to 1975
<i>negen van de tien mensen</i>	nine out of every ten people
<i>van plan zijn</i>	to intend
<i>van nut zijn</i>	to be of use
<i>dit is van hout</i>	this is made of wood
<i>van brood leven</i>	to live on bread
<i>Nederlander van geboorte</i>	a Dutchman by birth
<i>iemand van naam kennen</i>	to know somebody by name
<i>ik rammel van de honger</i>	I'm dying of hunger
<i>een schat van een meid</i>	a really nice girl
<i>een kast van een huis</i>	an enormous house
<i>van ja/nee zeggen</i>	to say yes/no
<i>ik meen/denk/van wel/niet</i>	I think so/not

Note: the preposition *van* is often used colloquially before direct objects where it assumes a sort of partitive function:

Ik hoeft niet meer van die lange omwegen te maken.
Ik heb van alles gezien.

vanwege – because of, on account of (see *wegens*)

<i>vanwege het weer</i>	because of the weather
<i>van overheidswege</i>	from the government

via – via, from

<i>hij gaat via Utrecht naar A'dam toe</i>	he is going via Utrecht to A'dam
<i>ik heb het via mijn zuster gehoord</i>	I heard it indirectly from my sister
<i>zij hoorde het via-via</i>	she heard it on the grapevine

volgens – according to, in... ('s) opinion

<i>volgens mij</i>	in my opinion
<i>volgens de regels</i>	according to the rules
<i>volgens dit schilderij</i>	going by this painting

voor – for

<i>iets voor jou</i>	something for you
<i>voor de eerste keer</i>	for the first time
<i>voor alle zekerheid</i>	for safety's sake
<i>hij is voor zijn leven geborgen</i>	he's fixed for life
<i>woord voor woord</i>	word for word
<i>stuk voor stuk</i>	piece by piece
<i>één voor één</i>	one by one
<i>ik voor mij vond het lekker</i>	I personally found it delicious
<i>ik heb het voor het avondeten gemaakt</i>	I made it for dinner

vóór – before, in front of

<i>vóór het huis</i>	in front of the house
<i>Ik heb veel werk vóór me</i>	I have a lot of work ahead of me
<i>het schip lag vóór Tokio</i>	the ship lay off Tokyo
<i>vóór tien jaar</i>	ten years ago
<i>ik heb het vóór het avondeten gemaakt</i>	I made it before dinner

voorbij – past, beyond

<i>hij woont voorbij de kerk</i>	he lives past the church
----------------------------------	--------------------------

wegens – because of, on account of (see *vanwege*)

zonder – without

<i>een boek zonder kaft</i>	a book without a cover
<i>hij was zonder hoed</i>	he didn't have a hat on
<i>zonder u was het niet gelukt</i>	but for you it wouldn't have succeeded
<i>ik kan er niet zonder</i>	I can't do without it

13.1 Prepositional phrases

The following phrases made up of usually two prepositions and a noun are in common use, although many will be found only in the written language. Those incorporating the preposition *te* usually have an enclitic form of *te + den = ten* or *te + der = ter*, these being the former definite articles in the dative case for masculine/neuter nouns and feminine nouns respectively. Sometimes the noun also takes a dative *-e*. Many of these expressions are commonly abbreviated, eg. *i.p.v.* – *in plaats van*.

<i>aan de hand van</i>	on the basis of, judging from
<i>aan de voet van</i>	at the foot of
<i>aan deze/die kant van</i>	on this/that side of

aan weerskanten, -zijden van
als gevolg van
door gebrek aan
door middel van
in het midden van
in naam van

in oorlog met
in plaats van
in ruil voor
in strijd met
in tegenstelling tot
in vergelijking met
in weerwil van
met behulp van
met betrekking tot
met het oog op
met verwijzing naar
naar aanleiding van
onder auspiciën van
onder invloed van
op grond van
op initiatief van
op last van
per ingang van
uit hoofde van
te midden van
ter ere van
ter gelegenheid van
ter wille van
ten bate van
ten bedrage van
ten behoeve van
ten dienste van
ten gevolge van
ten gunste van
ten huize van
ten koste van
ten name van
ten noorden van (or *benoorden*)
ten oosten van (or *beoosten*)
ten opzichte van
ten tijde van

on both sides or on either side of
as a result of
through lack of
by means of
in the middle of
in the name of, on behalf of
(also *namens*)
at war with
instead of
in exchange of
contrary to, in defiance of
as opposed to, as distinct from
in comparison with
in spite of
with the help of, by means of
with reference to
in view/consideration of
with reference to
with reference to
under the auspices of
under the influence of
on account of
on the initiative of
by order of
as from (dates)
on account of, owing to
in the midst of
in honour of
on the occasion of
for the sake of
on behalf of, in aid of (charities)
to the amount of
on behalf of, in aid of
for the use of
as a result of
in favour of
at the home of
at the cost of
in the name of
to the north of
to the east of
with regard to
at the time of

ten voordele van
ten westen van (or *bewesten*)
ten zuiden van (or *bezuiden*)

to the advantage of
to the west of
to the south of

13.2 Notes on prepositions

13.2.1 PREPOSITIONS FOLLOWING NOUNS

A number of common prepositions can follow the nouns to which they refer in which case the direction of the action is emphasised rather than the place of the action. When followed immediately by the verb in subordinate clauses, they can be confused with separable prefixes (see p. 181).

zij gaat de stad in
hij liep de kamer uit
hij liep de kamer in/binnen
Roodkapje liep het bos helemaal door

she is going to town
he walked out of the room
he went into the room
Little Red Riding Hood walked right through the forest
the car drove around the corner
cross the first bridge on the right
we then drove up onto the main road
we cycled along the canal
the boys rowed down the river
he is going up/down the mountain
you must go that way

de auto reed de hoek om
gaat u de eerste brug rechts over
we reden toen de hoofdweg op
we fietsten het kanaal langs
de jongens roeiden de rivier af
hij gaat de berg op/af
je moet die kant op/uit

For prepositions following *ergens*, *nergens* and *overall* see p. 71.

13.2.2 USE OF *HEEN* WITH PREPOSITIONS

Several prepositions are used together with *heen* (which follows the noun) to indicate direction. The meaning of a preposition + noun + *heen* is similar to that explained in 13.2.1 above; it can, however, have a figurative meaning, as some of the following examples illustrate.

hij rende huilend door de menigte heen
langs elkaar heen praten
we gaan morgen naar A'dam toe/heen
de kinderen renden om/rond het park heen
hij keek om zich heen
het vliegtuig vloog over de stad heen
ik heb er overheen gelezen

he ran through the crowd crying
to talk at cross purposes
we are going to A'dam tomorrow
the kids ran around the park
he looked around (himself)
the plane flew over the city
it escaped me while reading

13.2.3 DOUBLE PREPOSITIONS

Many of the prepositions given above can be used together to further emphasise the position or direction of the action.

<i>hij is aan promotie toe</i>	he is due for a promotion
<i>het water was tot aan zijn knieën</i>	the water was up to his knees
<i>achter in de tuin</i>	down the back of the garden
<i>hij is achter in de twintig</i>	he is in his late twenties
<i>hij reed achter uit de garage</i>	he reversed out of the garage
<i>binnen in de schuur</i>	inside the shed
<i>boven op de kast</i>	(up) on top of the cupboard
<i>dat gebeurde buiten mij om</i>	it happened without my knowledge
<i>midden in het bos</i>	in the middle of the forest
<i>je gaat onder de brug door</i>	you go through under the bridge
<i>hij kwam op me af</i>	he came up to me
<i>de op twee na grootste stad</i>	the third largest city
<i>op Dolf na</i>	except for Dolf
<i>hij is op winst uit</i>	he is out for a profit
<i>hij reed tegen een boom op</i>	he drove into a tree
<i>hij reed tegen een muur aan</i>	he drove into a wall
<i>hij reed tegen de wind in</i>	he was driving against the wind
<i>dat was tegen alle verwachtingen in</i>	that was against all expectations
<i>ze begeleidden hem tot aan de grens</i>	they accompanied him up to the border
<i>tot nog toe</i>	up till now
<i>nou, tot over drie weken</i>	well, till three weeks from now
<i>tussen de huizen door staan bomen</i>	there are trees in between the houses
<i>vanaf volgende week</i>	from next week
<i>ik kon het vanuit het raam zien</i>	I could see it from the window
<i>ik kon het van het raam uit zien</i>	
<i>hij komt nu van Edam vandaan</i>	he has just come from Edam

Note: Use of *vandaan* with verbs of motion is similar to that of *naartoe* (see above).

<i>voor in de auto</i>	in the front of the car
<i>hij zit voor zich uit te kijken</i>	he was looking in front of him
<i>ik heb iets voor bij de pudding</i>	I have s.t. to have with (the) dessert
<i>het is voor na het scheren</i>	it is used after shaving

Note: Sentences such as *hij viel van de trap af*, *ze ging met hem mee* seem to be utilising double prepositions as given here but are in fact separable verbs followed by a preposition, i.e. *afvallen van*, *meegaan met*.

Many of the above prepositional pairs can be written together and act as independent adverbs (see p. 107).

<i>achterin</i>	in the back
<i>achterom</i>	around the back
<i>achteruit</i>	backwards
<i>binnenin</i>	inside
<i>bovenop</i>	on top
<i>middenin</i>	in the middle
<i>onderaan</i>	down the bottom (of a page)
<i>onderin</i>	at the bottom
<i>tussenin</i>	in between
<i>voarin</i>	in the front

13.2.4 OMISSION OF ENGLISH 'OF'

It should be noted that the preposition 'of' is often left untranslated in Dutch:

<i>een fles bier</i>	a bottle of beer
<i>een doosje lucifers</i>	a box matches
<i>een krat appels</i>	a crate of apples
<i>duizenden mensen</i>	thousands of people
<i>de provincie Utrecht</i>	the province of Utrecht
<i>een soort (van) vaas</i>	a sort of vase

14 Numerals (*telwoorden*)

14.1 Cardinal numbers (*hoofdtelwoorden*)

(*on*)even nummers – (un)even numbers (of houses or in a game)

(*on*)even getallen – (un)even numbers e.g. 3 is *een oneven getal*

0	<i>nul</i>	25	<i>vijfentwintig</i>
1	<i>een</i> ¹	26	<i>zesentwintig</i>
2	<i>twee</i>	27	<i>zevenentwintig</i> ²
3	<i>drie</i>	28	<i>achtentwintig</i>
4	<i>vier</i>	29	<i>negenentwintig</i>
5	<i>vijf</i>	30	<i>dertig</i>
6	<i>zes</i>	40	<i>veertig</i> ^{3,5}
7	<i>zeven</i> ²	50	<i>vijftig</i> ⁵
8	<i>acht</i>	60	<i>zestig</i> ⁵
9	<i>negen</i>	70	<i>zeventig</i> ⁵
10	<i>tien</i>	80	<i>tachtig</i> ⁶
11	<i>elf</i>	90	<i>negentig</i>
12	<i>twaalf</i>	100	<i>honderd</i>
13	<i>dertien</i>	101	<i>honderd een</i> ^{7,8}
14	<i>veertien</i> ³	153	<i>honderd drieënvijftig</i> ^{7,8}
15	<i>vijftien</i>	266	<i>tweehonderd zesenzestig</i> ^{7,8}
16	<i>zestien</i>	1000	<i>duizend</i>
17	<i>zeventien</i>	1008	<i>duizend acht</i> ^{7,8}
18	<i>achttien</i>	5010	<i>vijfduizend tien</i> ⁷
19	<i>negentien</i>	6788	<i>zesduizend zeshonderd achtentachtig</i> ⁷
20	<i>twintig</i>	200,000	<i>tweehonderdduizend</i> ⁷
21	<i>eenentwintig</i>	1,000,000	<i>één miljoen</i>
22	<i>tweeëntwintig</i> ⁴	2,000,000	<i>twee miljoen</i>
23	<i>drieëntwintig</i> ⁴	one billion	<i>één miljard</i> (i.e. one thousand million)
24	<i>vierentwintig</i>		

Notes

1 The numeral *een* is written *één* in contexts where it could be read as the indefinite article or simply to emphasize it means one e.g. *Ik heb maar één broertje en dat is meer dan genoeg*. One must not conclude that whenever *een* means one it must bear acute accents – only when confusion could arise or emphasis is required, i.e. *een van de kopjes heeft geen oor* – here the word can only be read as one and the indefinite article would not make sense.

2 When pronouncing numbers deliberately as in giving telephone numbers all derivatives of the word *zeven* are commonly pronounced *zeuven*, *zeuventien* etc. to avoid confusion with *negen*.

3 Note that *veertien* and *veertig* deviate in spelling and pronunciation from the basic cardinal *vier*.

4 In numerals combining *twee* and *drie* plus *en* a diaeresis is required on the *en* to distinguish a separate syllable.

5 The initial letters of the numerals 40, 50, 60 and 70 are unvoiced for historical reasons, i.e. one says *feertig*, *fijftig*, *sestig*, *seventig*.

6 Note the initial *t* in *tachtig*. It has historical connections with point 5.

7 One will often find mistakes in Dutch texts with regard to the division of numerals over 100. The rule is that a space is left after the hundreds and/or thousands, but not between the multiples and the hundreds and/or thousands. To write them together as in German is considered unwieldy.

8 Note that no 'and' is inserted between *honderd/duizend* and the following figure. One does in fact hear *driehonderd en tien* but this is in more deliberate speech and is only used and found before low numerals and is never necessary. *En* is always used however, in standing expressions such as *Verhalen van duizend-en-één nacht* and *ze praatten over duizend en één dingen*. *Eén* is sometimes heard before *honderd* and *duizend* but is not common.

9 In the Netherlands, as in so many European countries, a seven is often written differently: 7 – seven.

Note: In Holland it is usual to count in hundreds up to 10,000 and only above that figure to count in thousands. i.e. 6,300 is read *drieënzestig honderd*. Even thousands are, however, said in thousands, i.e. 2000 is *tweeduizend* and not *twintighonderd*.

The Dutch use a full-stop when writing thousands, not a comma: e.g. 10.000.

14.1.1 DERIVATIVES OF CARDINALS

Honderd, duizend and *miljoen* take an *-en* ending when one means hundreds of etc., eg. *duizenden mensen gingen naar de kermis*.

Met ons/z'n tweeën, drieën, vieren, vijven, zessen etc. Such expressions are very common and mean two of us/them etc. Note that expressions with *ons* must have a *wij* as subject of the sentence whereas those with *hun/z'n* (never *zijn*) can have *wij* or *zij* as subject.

We gingen met ons/z'n vieren naar de bioscoop.
Zij hebben het met z'n tienden gedaan.

Theoretically any numeral can bear this ending, eg. *met z'n vijftig* but it is only common among lower figures. It is in fact the only way the Dutchman has of expressing 'there were five of us'.

A more intimate and colloquial form of the above is *met z'n tweetjes, drietjes* etc. Also *in z'n eentje* = on his own. The *-en* ending is also found in expressions such as *een van ons tweeën*; also in time (see Time below).

Another interesting derivative is *tweeling, drieling, vierling* etc. for twins, triplets, quadruplets etc. These words take a singular verb, eg. *Vandaag is er in Leiden een zesling geboren*.

een veertigtal etc. = about 40 altogether.

Ik heb een vijftigtal studenten in de klas.

Note also *tientallen* + plural noun = tens of,
tientallen mensen – tens of people.

Enerlei, tweeërlei, drieërlei etc. mean 'of one/two/three kind(s)'. Also *allerlei* – all kinds of. Those formed from numerals are a little stilted, however.

Het dubbele, driedubbele, vierdubbele etc. render 'twice/three/four times as much'.

Ik heb het vijfde betaald. I paid five times as much.

Notes on cardinals

1	
<i>een goede veertig</i>	a good forty, at least forty
<i>een dikke honderd</i>	a good hundred
<i>een kleine zestig</i>	no more than sixty
<i>onder/over (boven) de zestig</i>	under/over sixty

in de vijftig
'n twintig jaar geleden
een jaar of twintig geleden

about fifty
about twenty years ago
about twenty years ago

The last expression is very common in all sorts of contexts: *een man of tien, een stuk of zes, een boek of twaalf*.

2 Telephone numbers:

When reading a telephone number aloud it is usual to divide the figure into couplets and read *tweëndertig veertig eenenzestig* – 324061. It is, however, permissible to read the numbers out individually. Dutch phone numbers look as follows: 030-761253: the first number is the *kengetal* or *netnummer* of the town concerned and the second is the *abonneenummer*.

3 One in every ten etc. is said *een op de tien (mensen)*. Nine out of every ten etc. is, however, *negen van de tien (mensen)*.

4 The English word 'number' can be rendered in several ways in Dutch:

<i>het telwoord</i>	number in the sense of numeral i.e. as in <i>telefoonnummer</i> , or <i>hij woont op nummer 5</i>
<i>het cijfer</i>	a figure, cipher (also a mark at school)
<i>het getal</i>	arithmetic number, <i>getallen optellen</i> – to add up numbers
<i>het aantal</i>	quantity, i.e. <i>een aantal boeken</i> – a number of books
<i>het tal</i>	most common in the expression <i>tal van</i> eg. <i>tal van mensen zijn gekomen</i> = many people came, a number of

14.2 Ordinal numbers (*rangtelwoorden*)

1st	<i>eerste</i>	22nd	<i>tweëntwintigste</i>
2nd	<i>tweede</i> ¹	23rd	<i>drieëntwintigste</i>
3rd	<i>derde</i>	24th	<i>vierentwintigste</i>
4th	<i>vierde</i>	25th	<i>vijfentwintigste</i>
5th	<i>vijfde</i> ²	26th	<i>zesentwintigste</i>
6th	<i>zesde</i> ²	27th	<i>zevenentwintigste</i>
7th	<i>zevende</i>	28th	<i>achtentwintigste</i>
8th	<i>achtste</i>	29th	<i>negenentwintigste</i>
9th	<i>negende</i>	30th	<i>dertigste</i>
10th	<i>tiende</i>	40th	<i>veertigste</i>
11th	<i>elfde</i> ²	50th	<i>vijftigste</i>
12th	<i>twaalfde</i> ²	60th	<i>zestigste</i>
13th	<i>dertiende</i>	70th	<i>zeventigste</i>
14th	<i>veertiende</i>	80th	<i>tachtigste</i>

15th	<i>vijftiende</i>	90th	<i>negentigste</i>
16th	<i>zestiende</i>	100th	<i>honderdste</i>
17th	<i>zeventiende</i>	101st	<i>honderdeerste</i> ³
18th	<i>achttiende</i>	121st	<i>honderdeenentwintigste</i> ³
19th	<i>negentiende</i>	1000th	<i>duizendste</i>
20th	<i>twintigste</i>	8452nd	<i>achtduizendvierhonderdtweënvijftigste</i> ³
21st	<i>eenentwintigste</i>	1,000,000th	<i>miljoenste</i>

All ordinals after 20th end in *-ste* in Dutch. Ordinals can be used as nouns or as adjectives and always preserve the final *-e*, eg. *een tweede huis* (compare *een rood huis*).

Notes

- Tweede* actually contradicts the spelling rules of Dutch; in such an open syllable one would expect *twede*.*
- In these ordinals the *f* or *s* preceding the *-de* ending is voiced under influence of the following voiced sound, i.e. pronounced *zezde*, *elvde* etc.
- Note the omission of 'and', i.e. hundred and twentyfirst.

Notes on ordinals

- In certain standard expressions ordinals are found with the older case ending *-en*, eg. *ten eersten male*, *ten tweeden male*.
- The ordinals are often used as follows when listing points, i.e. firstly, secondly, thirdly, finally – *ten eerste*, *ten tweede*, *ten derde*, *ten laatste*.
- Expressions such as every tenth tree can be translated literally as *elke/iedere tiende boom*, but are also commonly rendered as *om de tien bomen*, *om de drie weken*.
- Hoeveel* and *zoveel* can also take the ordinal ending *-ste*.
De hoeveelste bezoeker? (see p. 230)
Hij heeft me voor de zoveelste keer opgebeld – the umpteenth time.
- Foreign kings are always denoted by the ordinal as in English.
Karel de Vijfde, *Elisabeth de Tweede* (note capital letter)

The Dutch kings, however, are usually referred to with the cardinal, i.e. *Koning Willem II* (pronounced *twee*).

6 The various English abbreviations *st*, *nd*, *th* etc. are all rendered in Dutch by *e*, eg. *1e*, *122e* etc. One does occasionally find *for* for 1st and 2nd, *1ste* and *2de*.

7 The Dutch have an unusual way of expressing 'the second largest', 'the fourth most important' etc.: *Het op één na grootste schip* – the second largest boat. *Op drie na de belangrijkste operazanger* – the fourth most important opera singer.

8 *andermaal* = second time; it is commonly used at auctions for 'going once, going twice' = *eenmaal*, *andermaal*.

14.3 Fractions (*breukgetallen*)

1/4	<i>een kwart</i> ¹
1/2	<i>een half</i> ²
3/4	<i>driekwart</i>
1 1/2	<i>anderhalf</i> ² (-ve)
2 1/2	<i>twee-en-een-half</i> ² (-ve)
1/8	<i>een achtste</i> (<i>deel</i>)
2/3	<i>twee derde</i> ³ (<i>van de mensen</i> etc.)
3/8	<i>drie achtste</i>
1/16	<i>een zestiende</i> (<i>deel</i>)
0,5%	<i>nul komma vijf procent</i> ¹ = point five per cent
1,8%	<i>één komma acht procent</i> = one point eight per cent

Notes

- | | |
|---------------------|---------------------------------------|
| <i>een kwartier</i> | 1/4 of an hour (see Time) |
| <i>een kwartaal</i> | 1/4 of a year, period of three months |
| <i>een kwartje</i> | 25 cents Dutch currency |
- The English word *half* causes difficulties because the noun and the adjective in Dutch are different words unlike English, i.e. *de helft*, *half*. The way the two are used is best illustrated by examples:

<i>de helft van de mensen</i>	– half the people (only possibility for people)
<i>de helft van de fles</i>	– half the bottle
<i>de halve fles</i>	
<i>Hij heeft de helft van de appel opgegeten.</i>	
<i>Hij heeft de halve appel opgegeten.</i>	
<i>Hij heeft de appel half opgegeten.</i>	
<i>Hij heeft de appel voor de helft opgegeten.</i>	
<i>Ik heb de helft van het boek al uit. / Ik heb het halve boek al uit.</i>	
<i>Voor de halve prijs. / Voor de helft van de prijs.</i>	

1 One can also say *percent* and the noun is *percentage* (n).

One and a half retains an archaic form *anderhalf* which behaves like a normal adjective taking *-e* in cases where the adjective is normally inflected,

anderhalf uur, anderhalve meter.

Notice that *anderhalf, twee-en-een-half(-ve)* etc. are always followed by a singular noun:

drie-en-een-halve week.

In such expressions the *een* is usually swallowed and hardly heard.

3 one tenth of a pound = *een tiende pond*

Note the use of the singular in *twee derde van de bevolking is in de oorlog gestorven*; a plural of such fractions is possible if one refers to the parts as separate parts, eg. *twee derden van de taart moeten opgegeten worden.*

14.4 Arithmetic/calculation (*rekenen*)

to add	– <i>optellen</i>	4 plus (en) 4 is 8
to subtract from	– <i>afrekken van</i>	4 min 2 is 2
to multiply by	– <i>vermenigvuldigen met</i>	2 keer (maal) 3 is 6
to divide by	– <i>delen door</i>	10 gedeeld door 2 is 5

14.5 Temperature

1° – *één graad*

10° C/F – *tien graden Celsius/Fahrenheit*

12° *beneden/onder nul*

Het heeft vannacht 12° (twaalf graden) gevoren – it was 12° below last night.

or *We hebben vannacht 12° vorst gehad.*

De maximum-, minimumtemperatuur, de gemiddelde temperatuur.

14.6 Age

Hoe oud ben je (bent u)?

How old are you?

Ik ben maar/pas tien (jaar oud).

I am only ten (years old).

Wanneer ben je (bent u) geboren?

When were you born?

Ik ben (op) tien maart geboren.

I was born on the tenth of March.

Ik ben twaalf augustus jarig.

My birthday is on August 12th.

Op 14-jarige leeftijd.

At the age of 14.

Op mijn (zijn etc.) veertiende jaar.

At the age of 14.

Tussen mijn twaalfde en mijn eenentwintigste.

From the age of 12 to 21.

Tussen (de) 18 en (de) 20.

Between 18 and 20.

Hij is in de 60.

He is in his sixties.

Een man van begin 40.

A man in his early forties.

Een man van diep in de 60.

A man in his late sixties.

Een man van achter in de 60.

A man in his late sixties.

Hij is nog geen 60.

He is not yet 60.

Een man van boven/over de 50.

A man over fifty.

Een man van beneden/onder de 50.

A man under fifty.

Hij was ruim 40 (jaar oud).

He was a good 40 years old.

Hij is midden in de 40.

He is in his mid-forties.

Hij was een jaar of 40 (oud).

He was about 40.

De vijftenzestigplusser (65-plusser).

The pensioner.

De tiener.

The teenager.

De eenendertigjarige etc.

The 31-year-old etc.

De tachtigjarige.

The octogenarian.

(De) minderjarig(e), volwassen(e).

(The) minor, (the) adult.

Een man van middelbare leeftijd.

A middle-aged man.

14.7 Money

een cent, twee cent etc.

een stuiver (c) – vijf cent

een dubbeltje (n) – tien cent

een kwartje (n) – vijfentwintig cent

een gulden (c), twee gulden etc.

een rijksdaalder (c) – twee gulden vijftig

een tientje (n) – tien gulden

Notes on money

1 *cent/gulden* are always used in the singular when quoting prices. The plurals *centen/guldens* are used to refer to several one cent or one guilder coins.

Geef me twee guldens en twee kaartjes voor deze rijksdaalder.

The same applies to foreign currencies: *tien, vijf frank etc.*

2 The abbreviation for guilder is *f*, eg. *f 10*. In banks one sometimes sees *Hfl.* = *Hollandse florijnen*, an old word for guilder.

3 Prices are written with commas, not decimal points: *f 12,50* – pronounced *twaalf (gulden) vijftig (cent)* – the word *cent* is not necessary and not common, however.

Note: 5 guilders odd = 5 *gulden zoveel*.

4 Colloquially the word *piek* is used for guilder, eg. *Het kostte 10 piek*. In a similar way the word *ton* is used for 100,000 guilders, eg. *een halve ton, vijf ton etc.* Also the word *mille* for thousands eg. *dat kostte twee mille*.

5 Expressions such as 'he earns f 250 a month, a week etc.' are *hij verdient f 250 in de maand (per maand), in de week (per week) etc.*

14.8 Time

<i>Hoe laat is het?</i>	What is the time?
<i>Het is één uur.</i>	It is one o'clock.
<i>Het is vijf over een.</i>	It is five past one.
<i>Het is kwart over één.</i>	It is a quarter past one.
<i>Het is tien voor half twee.²</i>	It is twenty past one.
<i>Het is half twee.</i>	It is half past one.
<i>Het is vijf over half twee.</i>	It is twenty-five to two.
<i>Het is tien over half twee.²</i>	It is twenty to two.
<i>Het is kwart voor twee.</i>	It is a quarter to two.
<i>Het is tien voor twee.</i>	It is ten to two.

Notes on time

1	
at eight o'clock	— <i>om acht uur</i> — <i>te acht uur</i> (lit.)
at exactly eight o'clock	— <i>om acht uur stipt/precies</i> — <i>klokslag acht uur</i>
at about eight o'clock	— <i>om een uur of acht</i> — <i>omstreeks acht uur</i> — <i>rond acht uur</i> — <i>tegen acht (uur)</i> — <i>tegen achten</i>

2 There is also a number of expressions which add an *-en* ending to the numeral. They are frequently heard but can be avoided by using the alternatives already mentioned.

Het is al na/over drieën, vijven etc. — It is already past three, five etc.
Het was intussen bij zessen. — It was six o'clock by then.

3 Remember that *kwartier* in itself means a quarter of an hour.

I waited for a quarter of an hour.	<i>Ik heb een kwartier gewacht.</i>
Three quarters of an hour.	<i>Drie kwartier.</i>
One and a quarter hours.	<i>Vijf kwartier.</i>
	(also: <i>een uur en een kwartier</i>)

2 It is also possible to say *twintig over een* and *twintig voor twee*, but the practice is not common; *half twee etc.* is often also written as *halftwee*.

4 a.m./p.m. are rendered by *v.m./n.m.*, abbreviations of (*des*) *voor-, namiddags*. They are too formal for the spoken language, however; in conversation one would say *om zes uur 's morgens ('s ochtends) / 's avonds, om een uur 's nachts (in de nacht)*.

5 My watch is fast/slow/right. — *Mijn horloge loopt voor/achter/goed.*
My watch says four o'clock. — *Ik heb het vier uur.*

6 Note that *uur, kwartier, jaar, keer* (all neuter nouns) are never used in the plural after numerals.

Ik heb drie uur zitten lezen.

After indefinite numerals like *enkele* and *enige* they do appear in the plural, however,

Ze hebben enkele uren rondgewandeld.

Minuut and seconde (common gender nouns) always occur in the plural after numerals,

vijf minuten geleden; drie seconden later.

7	once an hour	<i>een keer in het uur, per uur; om het uur</i>
	three times a week	<i>drie keer in de week, per week</i>
	on the hour (half hour)	<i>op het hele (halve) uur</i>
	ten past the hour (the half hour)	<i>tien over het heel (half)</i>

14.9 Dates

<i>zondag</i>	<i>woensdag</i>	<i>zaterdag</i>
<i>maandag</i>	<i>donderdag</i>	
<i>dinsdag</i>	<i>vrijdag</i>	
<i>januari (jan.)</i>	<i>mei</i>	<i>september (sept.)</i>
<i>februari (feb.)</i>	<i>juni</i>	<i>oktober (okt.)</i>
<i>maart (mrt.)</i>	<i>juli³</i>	<i>november (nov.)</i>
<i>april (apr.)</i>	<i>augustus⁴ (aug.)</i>	<i>december (dec.)</i>

Days of the week and months of the year are nowadays written with small letters but are still sometimes found in texts with capital letters.

<i>begin april</i>	at the beginning of April
<i>half/midden/medio maart</i>	halfway through March, mid-March
<i>eind mei</i>	at the end of May

3 At times confusion arises between *juni* and *juli* in which case they are pronounced slowly with the emphasis on the final syllable.

4 The stress is on the penultimate syllable: *augústus*.

It is important to note the following usage of cardinals and ordinals with regard to dates in Dutch:

Note: *De hoeveelste is het vandaag?* – What is the date today?

Het is drie mei. – It is the third of May.

but

Het is de derde. – It is the third.

When the month is mentioned the cardinal is usually used, when not, then the ordinal. It is, however, not incorrect to say *de derde mei*.

On Friday the twenty-second of April. – (*Op*) *vrijdag tweeëntwintig april*.

The abbreviation at the top of a letter, for instance, is thus *vrijdag, 22 sept. 1977* – no *e* or *.* after 22.

The complete abbreviation is written 22-9-77.

22-10-77 is a *datum* (c)-date.

1977 is a *jaartal* (n)-date.

When reading *jaartallen* aloud it is not usual to insert the word *honderd*: *negentien* (*honderd*) *zevenenzeventig*.

In de zestiger jaren, in de jaren zestig. – In the sixties.

In vijf jaar tijds. – In five years' time.

Over vijf jaar. – In five years' time.

Om de eeuwwisseling. – At the turn of the century.

14.10 Weights

het gram

het ons

het pond (i.e. *een halve kilo*; an English pound is 454 grams)

het kilo (but usually regarded as being of common gender, eg. *een halve kilo*)

These weights are always used in the singular after numerals (as are *kwartier, uur, jaar* and *keer*), eg. *vijf pond, twee ons* (200 grams).

Fractions of these weights are expressed as follows:

één tiende gram (one tenth of a gram)

anderhalf ons

twee-en-een-half ons, 250 gram, een half pond, een kwartkilo; een halve kilo, een pond, 500 gram

driekwartkilo, anderhalf pond, 750 gram

You will find the various expressions incorporating *pond* are the most common on the whole although prices of meat, cheese etc. are often given *per ons*.

Note also *een klein pondje* – a bit less than a pound.

One says *f 1,50 per pond, per kilo etc.* or *het pond, het kilo*. People always refer to their weight in kilos, eg. *Ik weeg 70 kilo. Aankomen* – to gain weight, *afvallen* – to lose weight: both are conjugated with *zijn*. (see p. 142)

Ik ben dit jaar 10 kilo aangekomen/afgevallen.

Bijkomen can be used instead of *aankomen*.

14.11 Measurements

1 Length, height

De lengte – length of objects or height of people.

The height of a tree etc. is *de hoogte*.

Hoe lang bent u? – How tall are you?

Ik ben 1,72 lang. – pronounced *een meter tweeënzeventig*.

If quoting one's height in English measurements the words *voet* (feet) and *duim* (inches) are used.

Length up to one metre is said in centimetres (never decimetres).

Note: *de centimeter* – the tape measure.

<i>de breedte</i>	width
<i>de grootte</i>	size (i.e. largeness)
<i>de maat</i>	(shoe, shirt) size

2 Square and cubic measurements

vijf bij vijf (meter) five by five (metres)

drie vierkante meter three square metres

zes kubieke meter six cubic metres

3 Distance

Distances are, of course, measured in kilometres in Holland and the word *kilometer*, like *centimeter* and *meter*, is never used in the plural after numerals,

We hebben vandaag 20 kilometer gereden.

Note: *honderden/duizenden kilometers*.

The English measure mile is *mijl* (c) and can be used (in the singular also) when talking of distances in Anglo-Saxon countries.

Petrol consumption of a car is rendered as follows:

Mijn auto rijdt één op vijftien (i.e. *één liter op vijftien kilometer*) – fifteen kilometres to the litre.

Speed is expressed as follows: *hij reed tachtig kilometer per uur* – he was driving (at) 80 kilometres an hour. Compare: *hij reed met tachtig kilometer per uur de rivier in* – he drove into the river at eighty kilometres an hour.

14.12 Playing cards

<i>schoppen</i>	spades
<i>ruiten</i>	diamonds
<i>klaveren</i>	clubs
<i>harten</i>	hearts

de schoppenaas, -heer, -vrouw, -boer, -negen – ace, king, queen, jack and nine of spades.

One can also say *twee harten, drie ruiten etc.*

de troefkaart – trump card

15 Er

Er has four functions in Dutch: repletive, partitive, pronominal and locative. The four are dealt with separately below. It is possible to have various combinations of these in one clause; the complications arising from such combinations are dealt with in the notes following the description of the four functions.

15.1 Repletive *er*

Indefinite subjects are very commonly placed after the verb in Dutch with *er* introducing the verb in much the same way as 'there' can be used in English.

Er loopt een man op de straat.

There is a man walking in the street.

Er moeten nog veel meer mensen komen.

A lot more people should be coming.

Er bracht een juffrouw koffie rond.

A girl brought coffee around.

Toen kwam er een pastoor.

Then a priest arrived.

Wat is er gebeurd?

What happened?

Wie is er vandaag jarig?

Who has a birthday today?

On occasions, as in the last two examples, it can be omitted but the ear generally prefers it.

To this category belong also *er is/zijn* – 'there is/are'.

It should be noted that *liggen, staan* and *zitten* (less commonly *hangen* and *lopen*) often replace 'to be' in Dutch and they then usually occur in *er* constructions.

Er zit een muis in de hoek.

There is a mouse in the corner.

Er staat een foto van haar in de krant.

There is a photo of her in the paper.

Er lagen vier boeken op tafel.

Four books were lying on the table.

Loopt er een gracht achter jullie huis?

Is there a canal behind your house?

15.2 Partitive *er*

This *er* is used with numerals and adverbs of quantity, often corresponding to French 'en'. In English it means something like 'of them/it', but is usually not translated.

Hoeveel heb je? Ik heb er drie.

How many do you have? I have three (of them).

Hij heeft er genoeg.

He has enough (of them/it).

Het aantal is toegenomen. Vijftien jaar geleden waren het er honderd.

The number has increased. Fifteen years ago there were one hundred (of them).

Hoeveel bomen staan er (repletive) in die straat? Er (repletive) staan er (partitive) honderd.

How many trees are there in that street? There are one hundred (of them).

15.3 Pronominal *er*

This is the *er* which replaces the pronouns 'it' and 'them' (referring to things only) after prepositions, i.e. *op het, van het etc.* is an impossible combination in Dutch; this must be *erop, ervan etc.* *Op ze, van ze etc.* can only refer to people, never things – this would also be *erop, ervan etc.* (see p. 56)

De meeste ervan zijn te duur.

Most of them are too dear.

Ik heb het brood ermee gesneden. / Ik heb er het brood mee gesneden.

I cut the bread with it (with them).

Ik kijk er vaak naar.

I often look at it.

It is more usual to place *er* immediately after the finite verb and the preposition at the end of the sentence, but before past participles and infinitives.

These constructions must not be confused with *waar... op etc.* (see p. 63).

Note the following complicated usage of pronominal *er*: it is employed with verbs that are always followed by a set preposition i.e.: *overtuigen van* – to convince of, *denken aan* – to think of etc.

Ik ben ervan overtuigd dat...

I am convinced that...

Ik had er nooit aan gedacht het zo te doen.

I would never have thought of doing it like that.

Hij verdenkt er zijn vriend van een overval op een bank te hebben gepleegd.

He suspects his friend of having raided a bank.

De administratie heeft erop gestaan dat...

The administration insisted that...

Ben je er zeker van dat we op de goede weg zitten.

Are you sure that we are on the right road.

15.4 Locative *er*

This *er* replaces *daar* in unstressed positions.

Ik ben er nooit geweest.

Compare: *Daar ben ik nooit geweest.*

Zij heeft er tien jaar gewoond.

Je bent nog te jong om er in je eentje naartoe te gaan.

You are still too young to go there on your own.

Locative *er* is usually used with the verb *aankomen* (to arrive) when the place is not otherwise mentioned.

Hoe laat ben je er aangekomen?

What time did you arrive?

Notes on *er*

A repletive *er* and a pronominal *er* do not occur in the same clause – the pronominal *er* is usually deleted.

Er keken veel mensen naar het programma.

Er keken veel mensen naar.

A repletive *er* together with emphatic pronominal form *daar* is possible, however:

Daar keken (er) veel mensen naar.

Er werd niet veel over gesproken.

Dat artikel staat in De Telegraaf.

Dat artikel staat erin.

Er staat ook weinig sportnieuws in De Telegraaf.

Er staat ook weinig sportnieuws in.

Er lag een laagje zand op.

or the emphatic forms:

Daar moet geld bij.

Hier staat geen prijs op.

2 More than two *er*'s in one clause is impossible. In a clause where the sense demands three, you either delete the third or rephrase:

Deletion : *Er keken drie mensen naar het programma.*

Er keken er drie naar het programma.

Er keken er drie naar.

Rephrasing : *Er keken drie mensen naar het programma.*

Er waren er drie die naar het programma keken.

Er waren er drie die er naar keken.

3 The verb *uitzien* always requires *er* and should be learnt as *er uitzien*. This is an unusual idiomatic usage of the particle.

Hij ziet er ziek uit.

er uitzien translates 'to look' in the sense of 'to appear' or 'to look as if':

Hij ziet eruit alsof hij ziek gaat worden.

In such a construction *er* and *uit* are usually joined.

Note: *Het ziet er naar uit alsof het gaat regenen.*

naar is used with this verb in impersonal constructions with *het*.

4 It is common when using a split pronominal *er* construction in a sentence in the perfect tense for the writer to join the preposition (which is actually dependent on the *er*) to the following past participle, treating the two as a separable verb,

ik heb er mijn sokken in gedaan

ik heb er mijn sokken ingedaan

(see also p. 181).

16 Negation (*ontkenning*)

16.1 Position of *niet/nooit*

The negative follows:

1 Adjuncts of time

Ik kom morgen niet.

but for emphasis it could on occasions precede *morgen*.

We willen het dit jaar niet doen.

but for emphasis:

We willen het niet dit jaar doen (maar volgend jaar).

Note: *Niet* always precedes *altijd*:

Zijn verhalen worden niet altijd geloofd.

2 The object (definite)

The negative follows the direct object as long as it is definite, i.e. preceded by *de/het, deze/dit/die/dat*, possessives or a pronoun.

Hij heeft het boek nooit gelezen.

Compare: *Hij heeft nooit een boek gelezen.* (indefinite)

Ik kan de sleutel niet vinden.

Compare: *Ik heb nooit een sleutel kunnen vinden.* (indefinite)

Hij leest het boek niet. Leest hij het boek niet?

Jij kent hem niet. Ken je hem niet?

It does, of course, precede infinitives, past participles and separable prepositions in such sentences:

Ik heb het hem niet gegeven.

but

Ik heb het niet aan hem gegeven. (see prepositional objects)

Heeft zij het boek nooit gelezen?

Ik heb er mijn sokken niet in gedaan.

The negative either precedes or follows:

Complements of the verb *zijn*

Dat is niet de bedoeling.

Dat is de bedoeling niet.

Hij is niet mijn vader.

Hij is mijn vader niet.

The negative precedes:

1 The object (indefinite)

The negative precedes the direct object as long as it is indefinite, i.e. a noun preceded by *een*, *zo'n*, *veel* or indefinite pronouns like *iets*, *iemand* etc.

Hij heeft nooit een auto gehad.

We zullen niet veel (dingen) kunnen kopen.

Heb je er nooit iets over gehoord?

For *niet een* see Notes on negatives.

2 Adjuncts of manner

Ik ga niet met de auto.

Ik reis niet per vliegtuig.

De dokter zei dat mijn tante niet te hard moet werken.

In this example there is only one position possible. The doctor has not prescribed that she must not work, merely that she must not work too hard.

3 Adjuncts of place

Ik woon niet op de achtste etage.

Hij is nooit in Engeland geweest.

However, the negative can precede or follow *daar* or *hier*.

Hij is nooit daar geweest.

Hij is daar nooit geweest.

(Also: *Daar is hij nooit geweest.*)

but only:

Hij is er nooit geweest.

As *er* is an unemphatic *daar*, it cannot be stressed by putting *niet/nooit* before it.

Ik heb niet in de tuin gewerkt.

but

Ik heb in de tuin niet gewerkt (maar gespeeld).

Hij werkt niet in Amsterdam.

4 Prepositional objects

Ik had nooit aan een dergelijke oplossing gedacht.

Ze heeft niet naar zijn onzin geluisterd.

Ik heb het niet aan hem gegeven.

5 Predicative adjectives

Het boek is niet groen.

Ik ben niet rijk.

Notes on negatives

1 'Not... a/any' or 'no + noun' are always translated by *geen*:

I don't have a car.

I have no car.

Ik heb geen auto.

He doesn't spend any money.

He spends no money.

Hij heeft geen geld uit.

Note: the combination *niet... een* is possible when a contrast is being made.

Ik heb niet in een hotel gelogeed maar in een huis.

In such cases it cannot be replaced by 'no' in English.

2 'Not one' is *niet een* or *geen een*.

Niet een van mijn vrienden kwam me bezoeken.

Geen een van mijn vrienden kwam me bezoeken.

also

Geen van mijn vrienden. — None of my friends.

3 In colloquial Dutch 'never... a/any' is often expressed by *nooit... geen*, a grammatically incorrect double negative.

Zij hebben nooit geen auto gehad.

They have never had a car.

It should be:

Zij hebben nooit een auto gehad.

4 Further uses of *geen* :

The following examples show how *geen* sometimes renders a simple English 'not'.

Geese don't eat bananas.

Geenzen eten geen bananen.

also

Bananen eten ganzen niet.

They were not ordinary cats.

Het waren geen gewone katten.

He didn't know Dutch.

Hij kende geen Nederlands.

Also the expressions: *dienst hebben* (to be on duty), *dorst hebben* (to be thirsty), *haast hebben* (to be in a hurry), *honger hebben* (to be hungry), *slaap hebben* (to be sleepy), are negated by the use of *geen*, not by *niet* as in English.

Hij had geen haast.

He wasn't in a hurry.

Ze heeft geen slaap.

She isn't sleepy.

5 Not... at all is translated by *helemaal niet/geen*.

I didn't think of it at all.

Ik heb er helemaal niet aan gedacht.

I haven't got a car at all.

Ik heb helemaal geen auto.

6 Not... until is translated by *pas* (never *niet... tot*); in literary style *eerst* is found.

He's not coming until tomorrow.

Hij komt pas morgen.

They are not coming till next Monday.

Zij komen pas aanstaande maandag.

Not till then will it happen.

Eerst dan zal het geschieden.

7 'Not... either' is translated simply by *ook niet/geen*.

I'm not going either.

Ik ga ook niet.

She hasn't got one either.

Zij heeft er ook geen.

8 'Not yet' is translated by *nog niet* :

They aren't home yet.

Zij zijn nog niet thuis.

9 Note the following affirmative/negative couplets:

iets – something

iemand – someone, -body

niets – nothing

niemand – no-one, -body

ergens – somewhere

ooit – ever

nergens – nowhere

nooit – never

wel – see p. 166

niet – see p. 166

Note: *nooit eerder* – never before.

Appendix 1: Letter writing

The envelope

The titles

<i>Dhr. L. Smit</i> – Mr.	<i>Prof. H. Segers</i> – Prof.
<i>Mevr. „</i> – Mrs.	<i>Ds. „</i> – Rev.
<i>Mej. „</i> – Miss	<i>Drs. „</i> – (Dutch graduate title)
<i>Mw. „</i> – Ms.	<i>Dr. „</i> – Dr.

The address

Gildstraat 149
7762 AD HEESWIJK (N-B)

Note that the number follows the name of the street. The town or city is in the upper case and underlined when type-written and just underlined when hand-written. If it is a letter for abroad the country is given capitals and underlined, not the town. The province is often given in abbreviated form in brackets after the town if it is a little known place.

In 1978 postcodes were introduced in the Netherlands; they consist of four numbers followed by two capital letters and are placed before the name of the town, as illustrated.

Back of envelope

afz. B. de Bruin
Hoogstraat 10
2509 BA 's-GRAVENHAGE

The Dutch always put the address of the sender on the back of the envelope. The abbreviation *afz.* stands for *afzender*. Note too that Dutch names in *de*, *den* or *van* capitalise the main part of the name only. In telephone books etc. too such names are found under the noun not the preposition or article.

The letter

Address and date

The date is placed at the top right hand corner under the sender's address (but this is

not always included in less formal letters as it is always written on the back of the envelope):

10 september 1977

There is no dot after the numeral, nor is there a small *e* (abbreviation for ordinals) because in such expressions the cardinal numeral is used in Dutch. The months are always written with small letters nowadays.

Modes of address in opening a letter

1. When writing to a firm

Mijne heren,
Geachte heren,
Geachte heer/mevrouw,

2. When writing to an individual one doesn't know

Zeer geachte heer B.,
Geachte mevrouw B.,
Geachte mejuffrouw B.,

The *zeer* need only be used when one is being hyper-polite or writing to people in high positions, i.e. professors, politicians etc.

3. When writing to acquaintances and friends

Beste heer Meijer,
Beste mevrouw M.,
Beste mejuffrouw M.,
Beste Joop,

Particularly close friends, girl and boy friends and relatives are addressed as follows

Lieve Anneke,

Endings

1. When writing to a firm or stranger

Met de meeste hoogachting,
Hoogachtend,

If one has been in touch with the individual previously, one can replace the above with:

Met vriendelijke groet(en),

2 To acquaintances and friends one writes

Vriendelijke/Hartelijke groeten,

This may be followed by or simply replaced by

*(Uw) Je
Otto*

In very informal letters one can end simply with

*Groetjes,
Wim*

Expressions used in formal letter writing

<i>Uw kenmerk/referentie</i>	your reference
<i>ter kennisneming + name</i>	cc + name (put at top of letter)
<i>met verwijzing naar</i>	with reference to
<i>naar aanleiding van</i>	
<i>Met verwijzing naar uw brief van...moge ik</i>	I would like
<i>Hartelijk (Vriendelijk) dank voor Uw brief van 22 dezer op 28 dezer</i>	of this month on the 28th of this month
<i>21 okt. j.l. (jongstleden)</i>	28th October last
<i>per 26 dec. a.s. (aanstaande)</i>	as from 26th December next
<i>Uw brief d.d. 15 mei (de dato)</i>	your letter of the 15th of May
<i>Wilt u zo vriendelijk zijn...</i>	Please
<i>Gelieve mij... te sturen</i>	Please send me ...
<i>Wilt u mij nadere gegevens/inlichtingen verstrekken</i>	Please supply further details
<i>iets per omgaande sturen</i>	to send something by return mail
<i>het verschuldigde bedrag</i>	the amount I owe you
<i>Ik sluit... hierbij in</i>	I hereby enclose
<i>Hierbij ingesloten vindt u...</i>	
<i>U bij voorbaat (voor uw moeite) dankend,</i>	thanking you in anticipation (for your trouble)
<i>Uw spoedig antwoord tegemoetziende</i>	Looking forward to a prompt reply
<i>Met belangstelling zie ik uw antwoord tegemoet</i>	I anxiously await a reply from you
<i>Uw antwoord zie ik te zijner tijd gaarne tegemoet</i>	Looking forward to hearing from you

U/Uw are still commonly written with capital letters in very formal style but this convention is fast losing ground.

Many married women in Holland sign and have letters addressed to them as follows: *Mrs. A. Smit*, whose maiden name was *Scherpenzeel*, would be addressed as *Mevr. A. Smit-Scherpenzeel*. A married woman never adopts the initial of her husband as is sometimes done in Anglo-Saxon countries.

Appendix 2: Proper nouns

1 Countries, inhabitants, nationalities, adjectives, languages

Country	Man (+ plural)	Woman	Adjective (language)
<i>Europa</i>	<i>Europeaan, Europeanen</i>	<i>Europese</i>	<i>Europees</i>
Albanië	<i>Albanees, Albanezen</i>	<i>Albanese</i>	<i>Albanees</i>
België	<i>Belg, Belgen</i>	<i>Belgische</i>	<i>Belgisch</i>
<i>Vlaanderen</i>	<i>Vlaming, Vlamingen</i>	<i>Vlaamse</i>	<i>Vlaams</i>
<i>Wallonië</i>	<i>Waal, Walen</i>	<i>Waalse</i>	<i>Waaals</i>
<i>Bulgarije</i>	<i>Bulgaar, Bulgaren</i>	<i>Bulgaarse</i>	<i>Bulgaars</i>
<i>Ceylon</i>	<i>Ceylonees, Ceylonen</i>	<i>Ceylonese</i>	<i>Ceylonees</i>
<i>Cyprus</i>	<i>Cyprioot, Cyprioten</i>	<i>Cypriotische</i>	<i>Cypriotisch</i>
<i>Denemarken</i>	<i>Deen, Denen</i>	<i>Deense</i>	<i>Deens</i>
<i>Duitsland</i>	<i>Duitser, Duitsers</i>	<i>Duitse</i>	<i>Duits</i>
<i>Bondsrepubliek</i>			<i>Westduits</i>
<i>Duitsland (BRD)</i>			
<i>de Duitse</i>			<i>Oostduits</i>
<i>Demokratische</i>			
<i>Republiek (DDR)</i>			
<i>Engeland</i>	<i>Engelsman, Engelsen</i>	<i>Engelse</i>	<i>Engels</i>
<i>het Verenigd Koninkrijk, Groot-Brittannië</i>			<i>Engels</i>
<i>Estland</i>	<i>Estlander, Estlanders</i>	<i>Estlandse</i>	<i>Estlands</i>
<i>Finland</i>	<i>Fin, Finnen</i>	<i>Finse</i>	<i>Fins</i>
<i>Frankrijk</i>	<i>Fransman, Fransen</i>	<i>Fran(çai)se</i>	<i>Frans</i>

<i>Griekenland</i>	<i>Griek, Grieken</i>	<i>Griekse</i>	<i>Grieks</i>	Greece
<i>Hongarije</i>	<i>Hongaar, Hongaren</i>	<i>Hongaarse</i>	<i>Hongaars</i>	Hungary
<i>Ierland</i>	<i>Ier, Ieren</i>	<i>Ierse</i>	<i>Iers</i>	Ireland
<i>Island</i>	<i>Islander, Islanders</i>	<i>Islandse</i>	<i>Islands</i>	Iceland
<i>Italië</i>	<i>Italiaan, Italianen</i>	<i>Italiaanse</i>	<i>Italiaans</i>	Italy
<i>Joego-Slavië</i>	<i>Joegoslaaf, Joegoslaven</i>	<i>Joegoslavische</i>	<i>Joegoslavisch</i>	Yugoslavia
<i>Lapland</i>	<i>Lap, Lappen</i>	<i>Lapse</i>	<i>Laps</i>	Lapland
<i>Letland</i>	<i>Let, Letten</i>	<i>Lettsche</i>	<i>Lettsch</i>	Latvia
<i>Litouwen</i>	<i>Litouwer, Litouwer</i>	<i>Litouwse</i>	<i>Litouws</i>	Lithuania
<i>Malta</i>	<i>Maltezer, Maltezers</i>	<i>Maltese</i>	<i>Maltees</i>	Malta
<i>Nederland</i>	<i>Nederlander, Nederlanders</i>	<i>Nederlandse</i>	<i>Nederlands</i>	Netherlands
<i>Holland</i>	<i>Hollander, Hollanders</i>	<i>Hollandse</i>	<i>Hoilands</i>	Holland
<i>Noorwegen</i>	<i>Noor, Noren¹</i>	<i>Noorse</i>	<i>Noors</i>	Norway
<i>Oostenrijk</i>	<i>Oostenrijker, Oostenrijkers</i>	<i>Oostenrijkse</i>	<i>Oostenrijks</i>	Austria
<i>Polen</i>	<i>Pool, Polen</i>	<i>Poolse</i>	<i>Pools</i>	Poland
<i>Portugal</i>	<i>Portugees, Portugezen</i>	<i>Portugese</i>	<i>Portugees</i>	Portugal
<i>Roemenië</i>	<i>Roemeen, Roemenen</i>	<i>Roemeense</i>	<i>Roemeens²</i>	Rumania
<i>Rusland</i>	<i>Rus, Russen</i>	<i>Russische, Russin</i>	<i>Russisch</i>	Russia
<i>Sovjet-Unie</i>				Soviet Union
<i>Oekraïne</i>	<i>Oekraïner, Oekraïners</i>	<i>Oekraïnsche</i>	<i>Oekraïnsch</i>	Ukraine
<i>Schotland</i>	<i>Schot, Schotten</i>	<i>Schotse</i>	<i>Schots</i>	Scotland
<i>Spanje</i>	<i>Spanjaard, Spanjaarden</i>	<i>Spaanse</i>	<i>Spaans</i>	Spain
<i>Tjecho-Slowakije</i>	<i>Tsjech(oslowaak), Tsjechen</i>	<i>Tsjechische</i>	<i>Tsjechisch</i>	Czechoslovakia
<i>Turkije</i>	<i>Turk, Turken</i>	<i>Turkse</i>	<i>Turks</i>	Turkey
<i>Wales</i>				Wales

¹ een Noor = a Norwegian; Noorman = Viking; Normandier = Norman

² Roemeens = Rumanian; Romeins = Roman; Romaans = Romance

Country	Man (+ plural)	Woman	Adjective (language)
Zweden	Zweed, Zweden	Zweedse	Zweeds
Zwitserland	Zwitsers, Zwitsers	Zwitserse	Zwitsers
<i>Afrika</i>	<i>Afrikaan, Afrikanen</i>	<i>Afrikaanse</i>	<i>Afrikaans</i>
<i>Algerije</i>	<i>Algerijn, Algerijnen</i>	<i>Algerijnse</i>	<i>Algerijns</i>
<i>Angola</i>	<i>Angolees, Angolezen</i>	<i>Angolose</i>	<i>Angolees</i>
<i>Egypte</i>	<i>Egyptenaar, Egyptenaren</i>	<i>Egyptische</i>	<i>Egyptisch</i>
<i>Ethiopië</i>	<i>Ethiopiër, Ethiopiërs</i>	<i>Ethiopische</i>	<i>Ethiopisch</i>
<i>Ghana</i>	<i>Ghanees, Ghanezen</i>	<i>Ghaneese</i>	<i>Ghanees</i>
<i>Guinea, Guinee</i>	<i>Guinees, Guinezen</i>	<i>Guineese</i>	<i>Guinees</i>
<i>Ivoorkust</i>			<i>Ivory Coast</i>
<i>Kenia</i>	<i>Kenier, Keniërs</i>	<i>Keniese</i>	<i>Kenias</i>
<i>Liberië</i>	<i>Liberiaan, Liberianen</i>	<i>Liberiaanse</i>	<i>Liberiaans</i>
<i>Libië</i>	<i>Libiër, Libiërs</i>	<i>Libische</i>	<i>Libisch</i>
<i>Marokko</i>	<i>Marokkaan, Marokkanen</i>	<i>Marokkaanse</i>	<i>Marokkaans</i>
<i>Mozambique</i>	<i>Mozambikaan, Mozambikanen</i>	<i>Mozambikaanse</i>	<i>Mozambikaans</i>
<i>Nigerië</i>	<i>Nigeriaan, Nigerianen</i>	<i>Nigeriaanse</i>	<i>Nigeriaans</i>
<i>Oeganda</i>	<i>Oegandees, Oegandezen</i>	<i>Oegandese</i>	<i>Oegandees</i>
<i>Rhodesia</i>	<i>Rhodesiër, Rhodesiërs</i>	<i>Rhodesische</i>	<i>Rhodesisch</i>
<i>Soedan</i>	<i>Soedanees, Soedanezen</i>	<i>Soedanese</i>	<i>Soedanees</i>
<i>Somalië</i>	<i>Somalier, Somaliërs</i>	<i>Somalische</i>	<i>Somalisch</i>
<i>Tanzania*</i>	<i>Tanzaniër*, Tanzaniërs</i>	<i>Tanzaniaanse</i>	<i>Tanzaniaans</i>
<i>Zaire</i>	<i>Zairees, Zairezen</i>	<i>Zairese</i>	<i>Zairees</i>
<i>Belgisch-Kongo</i>	<i>Kongolees, Kongolezen</i>	<i>Kongolese</i>	<i>Kongolees</i>
<i>Zambia</i>	<i>Zambiër, Zambiërs</i>	<i>Zambiaanse</i>	<i>Zambiaans</i>
<i>Zuid-Afrika</i>	<i>Zuidafrikaan, -afrikanen</i>	<i>Zuidafrikaanse</i>	<i>Zuidafrikaans</i>
	or <i>Zuidafrikaner, -afrikaners</i>		
<i>Azië</i>	<i>Aziaat, Aziaten</i>	<i>Aziatische</i>	<i>Aziatisch</i>
<i>Arabië (Saoedi-A.)</i>	<i>Arabiër, Arabiërs (Bedoeien)</i>	<i>Arabische</i>	<i>Arabisch</i>
	<i>Mohammedaan,</i>	<i>Mohammedaanse</i>	<i>Mohammedaans</i>
	<i>Mohammedanen</i>		
	<i>Moslim, Moslims</i>		
<i>Armenië</i>	<i>Armeniër</i>	<i>Armenische</i>	<i>Armenisch</i>
<i>Irak</i>	<i>Irakees, Irakezen</i>	<i>Irakese</i>	<i>Irakisch</i>
<i>Israël</i>	<i>Israëli, Israëli's</i>	<i>Israëlische</i>	<i>Israëliisch</i>
	<i>Israëliër, Israëliërs</i>		
<i>Jordanië</i>	<i>Jordaniër, Jordaniërs</i>	<i>Jordaanse</i>	<i>Jordaans</i>
<i>Jemen</i>	<i>Jemeniet, Jemenieten</i>	<i>Jemenietische</i>	<i>Jemenietisch</i>
<i>(de) Libanon</i>	<i>Libanees, Libanezen</i>	<i>Libanese</i>	<i>Libanees</i>
<i>Palestina</i>	<i>Palestijn, Palestijnen</i>	<i>Palestijnse</i>	<i>Palestijns</i>
<i>Perzië</i>	<i>Pers, Perzen</i>	<i>Perzische</i>	<i>Perzisch</i>
<i>Iran</i>	<i>Iranier, Iraniërs</i>	<i>Iraanse</i>	<i>Iraans</i>
<i>Syrië</i>	<i>Syriër, Syriërs</i>	<i>Syrische</i>	<i>Syrisch</i>
<i>Afghanistan</i>	<i>Afghaan, Afghanen</i>	<i>Afghaanse</i>	<i>Afghaanse</i>
<i>Burma</i>	<i>Burmaan, Burmanen</i>	<i>Burmaanse</i>	<i>Burmaans</i>
<i>Cambodja</i>	<i>Cambodjaan, Cambodjanen</i>	<i>Cambodjaanse</i>	<i>Cambodjaans</i>
<i>China</i>	<i>Chinees, Chinezen</i>	<i>Chineese</i>	<i>Chinees</i>
<i>de Chinese</i>			
<i>Volksrepubliek</i>			
<i>de Filippijnen</i>	<i>Filippijn, Filippijnen</i>	<i>Filippijnse</i>	<i>Filippijns</i>
			<i>Armenia</i>
			<i>Iraq</i>
			<i>Israel</i>
			<i>Jordan</i>
			<i>Yemen</i>
			<i>Lebanon</i>
			<i>Palestine</i>
			<i>Persia</i>
			<i>Iran</i>
			<i>Syria</i>
			<i>Afghanistan</i>
			<i>Burma</i>
			<i>Cambodia</i>
			<i>China</i>
			<i>Peoples Republic of China</i>
			<i>Philippines</i>

* the accents are only to show the stress

Country	Man (+ plural)	Woman	Adjective (language)	India
India	Indiër, Indiërs	Indiase	Indiaas ³	India
Indonesië	Indonesiër, Indonesiërs	Indonesische	Indonesisch	Indonesia
Nederlands-Indië	Inlander, Inlanders (pej.)	Indische	Indisch ³	Dutch East Indies
Java	Javaan, Javanen	Javaanse	Javaans	Java
Ambon	Ambonnees, Ambonnezen	Ambonnese	Ambonnees	Ambon
Zuid-Molukken	Zuidmolukker, -molukkers	Zuidmolukse	Zuidmoluks	South Moluccas
Japan	Japanner, Japanners	Japane	Japans	Japan
Korea	Koreaan, Koreanen	Koreaanse	Koreaans	Korea
Laos	Laotiaan, Laotianen	Laotiaanse	Laotiaans	Laos
Maleisië	Maleisiër	Maleisische	Maleisisch	Malaysia
Malaja	Maleier	Maleise	Maleis	Malaya
Mongolië	Mongool, Mongolen	Mongoolse	Mongools	Mongolia
Nepal	Nepalees, Nepalezen	Nepalese	Nepalees	Nepal
Pakistan	Pakistaan, (-ani), Pakistanen, (-ani's)	Pakistaanse	Pakistaans	Pakistan
Thailand	Thailander, Thailanders	Thailandse, Thaise	Thailands, Thais	Thailand
Tibet	Tibetaan, Tibetanen	Tibetaanse	Tibetaans	Tibet
Vietnam	Vietnamees, Vietnamezen	Vietnameese	Vietnamees	Vietnam
Australië	Australiër, Australiërs	Australische	Australisch	Australia
Nieuw Zeeland	Nieuwzeelander, -zeelanders ⁴	Nieuwzeelandse	Nieuwzeelands	New Zealand
Nieuw Guinea	Papoea, Papoea's		Nieuwguinees	New Guinea
de Fidji-Eilanden				Fiji
Amerika	Amerikaan, Amerikanen	Amerikaanse	Amerikaans	America
de Verenigde Staten				the United States
(de USA, V.S.)				
Argentinië	Argentijn, Argentijnen	Argentijnse	Argentijns	Argentina
Bolivië	Boliviaan, Bolivianen	Boliviaanse	Boliviaans	Bolivia
Brazilië	Braziliaan, Brazilianen	Braziliaanse	Braziliaans	Brazil
Canada	Canadees, Canadezen	Canadese	Canadees	Canada
Chili	Chileen	Chileense	Chileens	Chile
Columbia	Columbiaan, Columbianen	Columbiaanse	Columbiaans	Columbia
Cuba	Cubaans, Cubanen	Cubaanse	Cubaans	Cuba
de Dominicaanse				Dominican
Republiek				Republic
Groenland	Groenlander, -landers	Groenlandse	Groenlands	Greenland
Jamaica				Jamaica
Mexico	Mexicaan, Mexicanen	Mexicaanse	Mexicaans	Mexico
de Nederlandse	Azteek, Azteken	Azteekse	Azteeks	Aztec
Antillen	Antilliaan, -anen	Antilliaanse	Antilliaans	Netherlands Antilles
Aruba	Arubaan, Arubanen	Arubaanse	Arubaans	Aruba
Panama	Panamees, Panamezen	Panameese	Panamees	Panama
Paraguay	Paraguaan, Paraguayanen	Paraguaanse	Paraguaans	Paraguay
Peru	Peruaan, Peruanen	Peruaanse	Peruaans	Peru
Porto-Rico	Portoricaan, Portoricanen	Portoricaanse	Portoricaans	Puerto Rico
Suriname	Surinamer, Surinamers	Surinaamse	Surinaams	Surinam
Uruguay	Uraguaan, Uruguanen	Uraguaanse	Urugaans	Uruguay
Venezuela	Venezolaan, Venezolanen	Venezolaanse	Venezolaans	Venezuela

3 Indiaan/Indiaans – American Indian

Hindo(e)staan, Hindoe(e)staans are often used as synonyms for Indiër/Indiaas – especially for Indians in Surinam even if they happen to be Muslim.
Indisch = Indonesisch prior to 1950 and is still used in literature and by ex-colonials.

4 An inhabitant of the Dutch province of Zeeland is a Zeeuw.

Notes on nationalities

a The names of female inhabitants are not ever used in the plural with very few exceptions, eg. *Engelsen*, *Françaises*, *Russinnen*; otherwise the plural is avoided by paraphrasing, eg. *Die meisjes komen uit Australië* or *Die meisjes zijn Australisch*.

b Nowadays one sees in progressive publications the ending *-isch* spelt *-ies*. This is not an official alternative, however.

c When saying 'I am a Palestinian' etc. the indefinite article is often omitted in more formal style, i.e. *Ik ben Palestijn* (see p. 21).

d Note that words ending in *-ees* go *-ese* in the feminine or when the adjective is inflected, but the plural of the masculine is always *-ezen*.

e Countries for which there is no special word for the inhabitant or that have no particular adjectival form, usually paraphrase, i.e. *Hij komt uit Taiwan, deze rum is van Jamaica, olie uit Koeweit*.

f Countries ending in *-ije* take the stress on the *-ij*.

g Several countries have a different stress from English, eg. *Sovjët-Unie*, *Céylon*, *Oekraïne*.

2 Geographical names

Dutch provinces	Inhabitant (female)	Adjective
Noord-Holland	(Noord-)Hollander (Hollandse)	Noordhollands
Zuid-Holland	(Zuid-)Hollander (Hollandse)	Zuidhollands
Zeeland	Zeeuw (Zeeuwse)	Zeeuws
Noord-Brabant	(Noord-)Brabander (Brabantse)	Brabants
Limburg	Limburger (Limburgse)	Limburgs
Gelderland	Gelderlander (Gelderlandse)	Gelders
Utrecht	Utrechtenaar ¹ (Utrechtse)	Utrechts
Overijssel		Overijssels
Drent(h)e	Drent (Drentse)	Drents
Groningen	Groninger (Groningse)	Gronings
Friesland	Fries (Friezin)	Fries ²

Provincial capitals	Adjective	Inhabitant
Haarlem	Haarlems ²	Haarlemmer
's Gravenhage, Den Haag	Haags	Hagenaar
Middelburg	Middelburgs	Middelburger
's Hertogenbosch, Den Bosch	Bosch (Bossche)	Bossenaar
Maastricht	Maastrichts	Maastrichtenaar
Arnhem	Arnhems	Arnhemmer
Utrecht	Utrechts	Utrechtenaar ¹
Zwolle	Zwols	Zwollenaar
Assen	Assens	Assenaar
Groningen	Gronings ³	Groninger
Leeuwarden	Leeuwardens	Leeuwarder

Belgian provinces	Inhabitant (female)	Adjective
West-Vlaanderen (W. Flanders)	(West)Vlaming (Vlaamse)	Westvlaams
Oost-Vlaanderen	(Oost)Vlaming (Vlaamse)	Oostvlaams

Note: The towns *Leiden* and *Gouda* and the region *Twente* have their own irregular adjectival forms: *Leids*, *Gouds*, *Twents*.

Towns ending in *-dam* take the stress on *-dam*, eg. *Amsterdàm*, *Edàm* etc. The inhabitant is an *Amsterdammer* etc.

¹ The inhabitants of *Utrecht* are also known as *Utrechters*.

² *de Friese taal* but *de Friezen* (compare *Chinees*, *Portugees* etc.).

³ In some standard contexts an adjectival form in *-er* is heard, eg. *Groninger koek*, *Haarlemmer olie*.

Antwerpen (Antwerp)
Brabant
Limburg
Luik (Liège)⁴
Namen (Namur)⁴
*Luxemburg*⁴
Henegouwen (Hainaut)⁴

Antwerpenaar (*Antwerpse*)
Brabander (*Brabantse*)
Limburger (*Limburgse*)

Antwerps
Brabants
Limburgs
Luiks
Naams
Luxemburgs
Henegouws

Gotenburg
Kairo
Keulen (*Keuls*)
Kopenhagen
Lissabon
Londen
München
Milaan (*Milanees*)
Moskou
Napels
Neurenberg
Parijs
Praag
Rome (*Romeins*)
Rijs(s)el
Straatsburg
Tanger
Turijn
Venetië
Warschau
Wenen (*Weens*)

Gothenburg
 Cairo
 Cologne
 Copenhagen
 Lisbon
 London
 Munich
 Milan
 Moscow
 Naples
 Nuremberg
 Paris
 Prague
 Rome
 Lille
 Strasbourg
 Tangier
 Turin
 Venice
 Warsaw
 Vienna

Provincial capitals

Adjective

Inhabitant

Brugge – Bruges⁵
Gent – Ghent
Antwerpen – Antwerp
Brussel – Brussels
Hasselt
Luik – Liège
Namen – Namur
Aarlen – Arlon
Bergen – Mons

Brugs
Gents
Antwerps
Brussels
Hasselts
Luiks
Naams

Bruggeling
Gentenaar
Antwerpenaar
Brusselaar

Other important Belgian cities with two names (i.e. Dutch, French)

Doornik Tournai
Kortrijk Courtrai
Leuven Louvain
Oostende Ostend

Other cities with different names in Dutch from English (corresponding adjectives given in brackets)

Aken Aix-La-Chapelle
Athene Athens
Berlijn Berlin
Bèlgrado Belgrade
Boedapest Budapest
Boekarest Bucharest
Duinkerken Dunkirk
Florence (*Florentijns*) Florence
Frankfort Frankfurt
Genève Geneva

European rivers with different names in Dutch from English

de Donau Danube
de Maas Meuse
de Moezel Moselle
de Rijn Rhine
de Roer Ruhr
de Schelde Scheldt
de Theems Thames

Provinces and regions of other European countries (corresponding inhabitant and adjective given in brackets)

de Balkan, -staten Balkans
Baskenland (*Bask, Baskisch*) Basque country
Beieren (*Beier, Beiers*) Bavaria

⁴ All French-speaking provinces.

⁵ In English we usually refer to these cities by their French names if there is not a specifically English form as in the case of Ghent and Brussels for example.

<i>Bohemen (Bohemer, Boheems)</i>	Bohemia
<i>Bretagne (Bretons)</i>	Brittany
<i>Canarische Eilanden</i>	Canary Islands
<i>Croatië (Croat, Croatisch)</i>	Croatia
<i>Elzas (Elzasser, Elzassisch)</i>	Alsace
<i>Gallië (Galliër, Gallisch)</i>	Gaul
<i>Kaukasus (Kaukasisch)</i>	Caucasus
<i>Kreta (Kretenser, Kretensisch)</i>	Crete
<i>Lombardije (Lombardisch)</i>	Lombardy
<i>Lotharingen</i>	Lorraine
<i>Normandië (Normandiër, Normandisch)</i>	Normandy
<i>Picardië</i>	Picardy
<i>Pruisen (Pruis, Pruisisch)</i>	Prussia
<i>Rhodos</i>	Rhodes
<i>Saksen (Saks, Saksisch)</i>	Saxony
<i>Sardinië</i>	Sardinia
<i>Servië (Serviër, Servisch)</i>	Serbia
<i>Siberië</i>	Siberia
<i>Sicilië (Siciliaan, Siciliaans)</i>	Sicily
<i>Sleeswijk</i>	Schleswig
<i>Stiermarken</i>	Styria
<i>Tirol (Tiroler, Tirooms)</i>	Tyrol
<i>Zwaben (Zwaab, Zwaabs)</i>	Swabia

Other geographical areas

<i>de Alpen</i>	Alps
<i>de Atlantische Oceaan⁶</i>	Atlantic Ocean
<i>Bengalen</i>	Bengal
<i>de Bodensee</i>	Lake Constance
<i>het Caribische Gebied</i>	Caribbean
<i>de Caribische Zee</i>	Caribbean Sea
<i>de Golf van Biscaje</i>	Bay of Biscay
<i>De Golf van Bengalen</i>	Bay of Bengal
<i>de Indische Oceaan⁶</i>	Indian Ocean
<i>Kaap de Goede Hoop</i>	Cape of Good Hope
<i>Het Kanaal</i>	English Channel
<i>de Kaspische Zee</i>	Caspian Sea
<i>de Krim</i>	Crimea
<i>de Middellandse Zee</i>	Mediterranean Sea
<i>Midden-Europa</i>	Central Europe
<i>het Midden-Oosten</i>	Middle East

<i>het Nabije Oosten</i>	Near East
<i>de Noordpool</i>	North Pole
<i>de Noordzee</i>	North Sea
<i>de Oostbloklanden</i>	Iron Curtain Countries
<i>de Oostzee</i>	Baltic Sea
<i>de Perzische Golf</i>	Persian Gulf
<i>het Roergebied</i>	Ruhr
<i>de Stille Oceaan⁶</i>	Pacific Ocean
<i>het Verre Oosten</i>	Far East
<i>de Vogezen</i>	Vosges
<i>Vuurland</i>	Tierra del Fuego
<i>de Zuidpool</i>	South Pole
<i>de Zuidzee</i>	South Seas
<i>de Zwarte Zee</i>	Black Sea
<i>het Zwarte Woud</i>	Black Forest

3 Historical personages

When referring to well-known people who have names normally written in an alphabet other than the Latin alphabet, the names are usually transcribed according to Dutch phonetics,

Kroetsjev, Kaoenda, Tsjechow etc. Also *de Likoeed* (Israeli political party)

Kings of England, France, Germany etc. as well as popes are also given Dutch names where such exist (see also p. 226):

Karel (Charles), *Jacobus* (James), *Lodewijk* (Louis, Ludwig), *Boudewijn* (Baudouin, Baldwin), *Hendrik* (Henry, Heinrich), *Jan* (John, Johann).

<i>Karel de Grote</i>	Charlemagne
<i>Lodewijk Napoleon</i>	Louis Napoleon
<i>Jacobus de Tweede</i>	James II
<i>Johannes XXIV</i>	(Pope) John XXIV

Note: *Calvijn* – Calvin, *Galilei* – Galileo.

⁶ Note the stress *oceaan*.

Appendix 3: Common Dutch abbreviations (afkortingen)

Abbreviations can be of three kinds:

1 those that are simply a form of short-hand and which are read aloud as the words they represent, eg. *f* = *gulden*, *b.v.* = *bijvoorbeeld*.

2 those that are regarded as words in themselves and may (and usually are) pronounced using the letters, eg. *KLM* pronounced *KA-EL-EM*. Such abbreviations are designated by an asterisk in the list below.

3 a few abbreviations are read as words in themselves, not as letters. These are designated with +.

Many abbreviations can take an article which agrees in gender with the final noun in the name, eg. *het KNMI* because *instituut* is neuter. Sometimes other words are formed from these abbreviations, eg. *de A.O.W.* = *de Algemene Ouderdomswet*, hence *een AOW-er* = a pensioner; *de NSB* = *de Nationaal-Socialistische Bond*, hence *een NSB-er* = a Dutch Nazi.

<i>(het)</i> ABN*	<i>Algemeen Beschaafd Nederlands</i>	Standard Dutch
<i>(de)</i> ABN*	<i>Algemene Bank Nederland</i>	a Dutch bank
<i>(het)</i> ANP*	<i>Algemeen Nederlands Persbureau</i>	Dutch News Agency
<i>(de)</i> ANWB*	<i>Algemene Nederlandse Wielrijdersbond</i>	Dutch AA or R.A.C.
<i>(de)</i> AOW(-er)*	<i>Algemene Ouderdomswet</i>	pension(-er)
<i>a.s.</i>	<i>aanstaande</i>	next
<i>a.u.b.</i>	<i>alstublieft</i>	please
<i>aug.</i>	<i>augustus</i>	August
<i>(de)</i> AVRO ⁺	<i>Algemene Vereniging Radio Omroep</i>	a broadcasting association
<i>(de)</i> AWW(-er)*	<i>Algemene Weduwen- en Wezenwet</i>	Widow's pension
<i>bl., blz.</i>	<i>bladzij(de)</i>	page
<i>(de)</i> BRD	<i>Bondsrepubliek Duitsland</i>	German Federal Republic
<i>(de)</i> BTW*	<i>Belasting Toegevoegde Waarde</i>	Value Added Tax
<i>(de)</i> B.V.	<i>besloten vennootschap</i>	Pty. Ltd.
<i>(het)</i> CDA*	<i>Christen-Demokratisch Appèl</i>	Dutch political party (conservative)

<i>Cie</i>	<i>compagnie</i>	company
<i>C.S.</i>	<i>centraal station</i>	main station
<i>CRM*</i>	<i>Cultuur, Recreatie en Maatschappelijk Werk</i>	a Dutch ministry
<i>dec.</i>	<i>december</i>	December
<i>derg., dgl.</i>	<i>dergelijke</i>	and such
<i>dhr.</i>	<i>de heer</i>	Mr.
<i>d.i.</i>	<i>dat is</i>	i.e.
<i>Dr.</i>	<i>dokter, doctor</i>	Doctor
<i>drs.</i>	<i>doctorandus</i>	a Dutch academic title (M.A.)
<i>Ds.</i>	<i>dominee</i>	Reverend
<i>d.w.z.</i>	<i>dat wil zeggen</i>	i.e.
<i>e.d.</i>	<i>en dergelijke</i>	and such
<i>(de)</i> EEG*, EG*	<i>Europese (Economische) Gemeenschap</i>	(European) Common Market
<i>EHBO</i>	<i>Eerste Hulp bij Ongelukken</i>	First Aid
<i>enz.</i>	<i>enzovoort(s)</i>	et cetera
<i>(de)</i> EO*	<i>Evangelische Omroep</i>	a broadcasting association
<i>excl.</i>	<i>exclusief</i>	excluding
<i>f.</i>	<i>florijn (= gulden)</i>	guilder
<i>febr.</i>	<i>februari</i>	February
<i>fr.</i>	<i>frank (eg. 50 fr.)</i>	franc
<i>Frl</i>	<i>Friesland</i>	Friesland
<i>geb.</i>	<i>geboren</i>	born
<i>(de)</i> gebrs.	<i>gebroeders</i>	brothers
<i>Gld.</i>	<i>Gelderland</i>	Gelderland
<i>Gr.</i>	<i>Groningen</i>	Groningen
<i>(de)</i> H.A.V.O. ⁺	<i>hoger algemeen voortgezet onderwijs (school)</i>	a form of secondary school
<i>(de)</i> H.B.S.*	<i>hogere burgerschool</i>	„
<i>H.fl.</i>	<i>Hollandse florijnen (= gulden)</i>	guilders
<i>H.K.H.</i>	<i>Hare Koninklijke Hoogheid</i>	Her Royal Highness
<i>(het)</i> H.O.*	<i>Hoger Onderwijs</i>	tertiary education
<i>hs. (hss.)</i>	<i>handschrift (handschriften)</i>	manuscript(s)
<i>incl.</i>	<i>inclusief</i>	including
<i>i.p.v.</i>	<i>in plaats van</i>	instead of
<i>jan.</i>	<i>januari</i>	January
<i>jg.</i>	<i>jaargang</i>	volume, series
<i>Jhr.</i>	<i>Jonkheer</i>	aristocratic title (Lord)
<i>Jkvr.</i>	<i>Jonkvrouw</i>	aristocratic title (Lady)
<i>jl.</i>	<i>jongstleden</i>	last, past

<i>(de) KLM*</i>	<i>Koninklijke Luchtvaartmaatschappij</i>	Royal Dutch Airlines	<i>o.</i>	<i>onzijdig</i>	neuter
<i>(het) KNMI*</i>	<i>Koninklijk Nederlands Meteorologisch Instituut</i>	Dutch weather bureau	<i>o.a.</i>	<i>onder andere(n)</i>	among others
<i>(de) KRO*</i>	<i>Katholieke Radio-Omroep</i>	a broadcasting association	<i>okt., oct.</i>	<i>oktober</i>	October
<i>l.g.</i>	<i>laatstgenoemde</i>	the latter, last mentioned	<i>O.L.V.</i>	<i>Onze-Lieve-Vrouw</i>	Our Lady
<i>lic.</i>	<i>licentiaat, licentie</i>	Belgian University degree (M.A.)	<i>o.l.v.</i>	<i>onder leiding van</i>	under direction of
<i>m.</i>	<i>mannelijk</i>	masculine	<i>o.m.</i>	<i>onder meer</i>	among other things
<i>(de) M.A.V.O.*</i>	<i>middelbaar algemeen voortgezet onderwijs (school)</i>	a form of secondary school	<i>p., pag.</i>	<i>pagina</i>	page
<i>Mej.</i>	<i>Mejuffrouw</i>	Miss	<i>p.a.</i>	<i>per adres</i>	c/o
<i>Mevr.</i>	<i>Mevrouw</i>	Mrs.	<i>pct.</i>	<i>procent</i>	percent
<i>m.i.</i>	<i>mijns inziens</i>	in my opinion	<i>p.k.</i>	<i>paardekracht</i>	horse power
<i>Mij.</i>	<i>maatschappij</i>	company	<i>prk.</i>	<i>post (giro) rekening</i>	postal account (giro)
<i>(de) MO*</i>	<i>Middelbaar Onderwijsakte</i>	secondary teacher training diploma	<i>(de) PTT(-er)*</i>	<i>Posterijen, Telegrafie en Telefonie</i>	PMG (PMG employee)
<i>Mr.</i>	<i>Meester (in de rechten)</i>	Dutch academic title	<i>(de) PvdA*</i>	<i>Partij van de Arbeid</i>	Labor Party
<i>mrt.</i>	<i>maart</i>	March	<i>R'dam</i>	<i>Rotterdam</i>	Rotterdam
<i>ms. (mss.)</i>	<i>manuscript (-en)</i>	manuscript (-s)	<i>resp.</i>	<i>respectievelijk</i>	respectively
<i>(de) M.U.L.O.*</i>	<i>Meer Uitgebreid Lager Onderwijs (school)</i>	a form of secondary school	<i>R-K, r-k</i>	<i>Rooms-Katholiek</i>	Roman Catholic
<i>mv.</i>	<i>meervoud</i>	plural	<i>sept.</i>	<i>september</i>	September
<i>Mw.</i>	<i>Mevrouw/Mejuffrouw</i>	Ms.	<i>(de) SNV</i>	<i>Stichting Nederlandse Vrijwilligers</i>	Volunteers Abroad
<i>n.a.v.</i>	<i>naar aanleiding van</i>	with reference to	<i>str.</i>	<i>straat</i>	street
<i>(de) NAVO*</i>	<i>Noordatlantische Verdragsorganisatie</i>	NATO	<i>s.v.p.</i>	<i>s'il vous plait (= a.u.b.)</i>	please
<i>N-B</i>	<i>Noord-Brabant</i>	North Brabant	<i>t.a.v.</i>	<i>ten aanzien van</i>	with regard to
<i>n. C(hr)</i>	<i>na Christus</i>	A.D.	<i>t.b.c.*</i>	<i>ter attentie van</i>	att.
<i>(de) NCRV</i>	<i>Nederlandse Christelijke Radio-Vereniging</i>	a broadcasting organisation	<i>t.b.v.</i>	<i>tuberculose</i>	t.b.
<i>Ndl./Ned.</i>	<i>Nederlands</i>	Dutch	<i>(de) TEE*</i>	<i>ten bate van</i>	in aid of
<i>N-H</i>	<i>Noord-Holland</i>	North Holland	<i>tel.</i>	<i>ten behoeve van</i>	on behalf of
<i>nl.</i>	<i>namelijk</i>	namely	<i>(de) THS</i>	<i>Trans European Express</i>	international express train
<i>n.m.</i>	<i>namiddags</i>	p.m.	<i>t/m</i>	<i>telefoonnummer</i>	telephone number
<i>(de) NOS*</i>	<i>Nederlandse Omroep Stichting</i>	a broadcasting organisation	<i>t.n.v.</i>	<i>Technische Hogeschool</i>	technical college
<i>nov.</i>	<i>november</i>	November	<i>t.o.v.</i>	<i>tot en met</i>	up to and including
<i>nr.</i>	<i>nummer</i>	number	<i>(de) TROS*</i>	<i>ten name van</i>	in the name of
<i>de N.S.</i>	<i>Nederlandse Spoorwegen</i>	Dutch Railways	<i>Ts.</i>	<i>ten opzichte van</i>	with relation to
<i>(de) NSB*(-er)</i>	<i>Nationaal-Socialistische Beweging</i>	Dutch Nazi Party (Dutch Nazi)	<i>t.u.</i>	<i>Televisie- en Radio-omroepstichting</i>	a broadcasting association
<i>(de) N.V.</i>	<i>naamloze vennootschap</i>	Pty. Ltd.	<i>te uwent</i>	<i>Tijdschrift</i>	periodical, magazine
			<i>t.w.</i>	<i>te weten (= nl., d.i.)</i>	at your place
			<i>t.z.t.</i>	<i>te zijner tijd</i>	i.e., to wit
			<i>u.</i>	<i>uur (om 5 u.)</i>	in due course
			<i>(de) U.B.*</i>	<i>de Universiteitsbibliotheek</i>	o'clock
			<i>v.</i>	<i>van</i>	University Library
			<i>v., vr.</i>	<i>vrouwelijk</i>	of (in people's names too)
					feminine

<i>v.a.</i>	<i>vanaf</i>
(<i>de</i>) VARA ⁺	Vereeniging van Arbeiders- Radio-Amateurs
<i>v. C(hr.)</i>	voor Christus
<i>v.d.</i>	van den/der/de
<i>vgl.</i>	(<i>men</i>) vergelijk(e)
<i>vh.</i>	voorheen
<i>v.m.</i>	voormiddag
(<i>de</i>) V.N.*	Verenigde Naties
(<i>de</i>) V.O.C.*	Verenigde Oost-Indische Compagnie
(<i>de</i>) VPRO*	Vrijzinnig Protestants Radio-Omroep
(<i>de</i>) VS*	Verenigde Staten
(<i>de</i>) V.U. ⁺	Vrije Universiteit te Amsterdam
(<i>de</i>) VVD*	Volkspartij voor Vrijheid en Democratie
(<i>de</i>) VVV*	Vereniging voor Vreemdelingen- verkeer
(<i>de</i>) W.W.* ¹	Werkloosheidswet
(<i>de</i>) W.A.*	Wettelijke aansprakelijkheid
(<i>de</i>) W.A.O.*	Wet op de arbeidsongeschiktheid
zg., zgn.	zogenaamd, zogenoemd
Z-H	Zuid-Holland
<i>z.i.</i>	zijns inziens
Z.K.H.	Zijne Koninklijke Hoogheid
Z.M.	Zijne Majesteit
<i>z.o.z.</i>	zie ommezijde

from
a broadcasting
association
B.C.
of the (in people's
names too)
compare
formerly
a.m.
United Nations
Dutch East India Co.
a broadcasting
association
United States
Free University of
Amsterdam
a Dutch political party

Tourist bureau

unemployment benefits
third party insurance
invalid pension
so-called
South Holland
in his opinion
His Royal Highness
His Majesty
p.t.o.

Index

The numbers given are page numbers. In many instances relevant information is also to be found on the pages immediately following the page indicated here.

aan:

- after adjectives 81
- after verbs 185
- inseparable prefix 182
- preposition 205
- separable prefix 180

abbreviations: 260

- gender of 260

Ablautseries: 116, 125-133

- imperfect 116
- past participles 118

accents: 14

- acute 14
- emphasis 14
- French words 14
- grave 14

acute accent: 14

address:

- forms of 52
- letters 244

adjectival adjuncts:

- expressing passive voice 164
- replacing relative clauses 67

adjectives: 74-91

- after nouns 90
- case remnants 77
- comparative 77
- colours 89
- formation of 84
- inflection of 74
- nationality 16, 76, 78, 80, 84, 90, 248-258
- predicative followed by preposition 81-83
- prefixed to nouns 90
- prefixes 87
- spelling changes 76
- suffixes 84
- superlative 79
- used as nouns 31, 84
- used only predicatively or attributively 80
- with nouns 90

adverbs: 92-111

- as conjunctions 199

- comparative 92
- diminutive 48
- formation of 110
- inflection of 94
- intensifying 94
- interrogative 109
- of manner 108
- of place + direction 106
- of time 95-106
- superlative 93
- with *meer* 78, 93
- with *meest* 79, 93
- word order of 95

age: 228

al:

- adverb 96, 97, 103, 121
- all 71

alle: 71

- *allebei* 70
- *allemaal* 71

alleen:

- conjunction 190, 199

als:

- conjunction 124, 193
- preposition 21, 197, 206

and:

- omission of 91, 190, 223, 226

andere:

- indefinite pronoun 70

apostrophe:

- possession 15, 42
- plural 35

arithmetic: 228

articles:

- definite 22
- indefinite 21

as... as:

- replaced by compound adjective 88
- *zo... als* 88

be-: 117, 118, 182

before:

- adverb 104
- conjunction 192, 201
- preposition 15, 217

beginnen:

- past tenses 130
- perfect tense with *te* 155
- with auxiliary 142

1 In de W.W. lopen - to be on unemployment benefits.

- (be)horen: 152
 beide: 70
 bij:
 - after adjective 83
 - after verbs 185
 - preposition 207
 - separable prefix 180
 both:
 - *allebei* 70
 - *beide* 70
 capital letters:
 - adjectives of nationality 16, 90
 - days 231
 - months 231
 - *u/uw* 246
 - use of 15
 cases: 20
 - adjectives 77
 - dative 20
 - genitive 20
 - naming of 20
 - order of 20
 - remnants of 20, 217
 cities:
 - Belgian 256
 - Dutch 255
 - other 256
 class:
 - strong verbs 125
 collective nouns:
 - gender of 30
 colours: 89
 - compound 89
 - formed from nouns 90
 - *ish* 89
 comma:
 - in relative clauses 18, 63
 - use of 18
 comparative:
 - adjectives 77
 - adverbs 92
 - formation of 77
 - inflection of 78
 - used attributively with *meer* 78
 compound nouns:
 - gender of 32
 - inflection in 90
 - stress 90
 - with adjectives 90
 compound words:
 - adjectives 88
 - colours 89
 - hyphen, use of 16, 90
 - medial sounds 16
 conditional:
 - contracted 121, 138, 139
 - contracted in passive 164
 - formation of 120
 - modals 149
 - use of 124
 conjunctions: 190-204
 - adverbial 199
 - co-ordinating 190
 - correlative 199
 - interrogative 202
 - introducing infinitive clauses 201
 - subordinating 192
 co-ordinate:
 - clauses, word order in 97, 190
 - conjunctions 190
 could:
 - conditional 149, 150
 - imperfect 146
 countries: 248-258
 - adjectives of 248
 - inhabitants 248
 - languages 248
 daar:
 - adverb 106, 237
 - conjunction 193
 - position of negative 240
 - replacing 'that' 62
 dan:
 - adverb 105
 - conjunction 79, 149, 199
 dat:
 - demonstrative pronoun 61
 - relative pronoun 63
 - replacing -ing clauses 168
 - subordinating conjunction 192
 dates: 231
 dative: see 'cases'
 days of the week: 98, 231
 de: see also 'definite article'
 - inclusion of 23
 - omission of 22
 - preceded by adjectives 91
 - prefixed 91
 definite article:
 - case remnants 20, 22
 - inclusion of 23
 - omission of 22
 degene:
 - indefinite 70
 - relative 66
 de heer: see *meneer*
 demonstrative:
 - adjectives 26, 61
 - case forms 26, 58
 - forms 26
 - possessive use of 58, 59
 - pronouns 61
 - with prepositions 62
 diaeresis: see 'spelling'
 die:
 - demonstrative pronoun 61
 - object pronoun 50, 57
 - referential pronoun 57
 - relative pronoun 63, 65-68
 dienen: 152
 diens:
 - demonstrative 26, 58
 - possessive 26, 58
 diminutives: 43-49
 - adjectives 48
 - adverbs 48
 - formation of 43
 - gender of 30
 - numerals 49, 224
 - plurals of 35
 - prepositions 49
 - pronouns 49
 - spelling 45
 - use of 46
 - variant forms 45
 - vowel change 44
 distance: 233
 doch:
 - conjunction 190
 doen:
 - auxiliary 156, 177
 - present tense 114
 - without *te* 155
 door:
 - after adjectives 81
 - after verbs 185
 - conjunction 201
 - inseparable prefix 182
 - preposition 208
 - separable prefix 180
 - with passive 162
 d'r:
 - possessive 43, 51, 59
 - relative 65, 66
 dus:
 - conjunction 190
 een:
 - cardinal 222
 - case remnants 21
 - indefinite article 21
 - omission of 21
 een paar:
 - indefinite pronoun 70
 either ... or: 200
 elkaar:
 - reciprocal pronoun 176
 en: 190
 enkele:
 - indefinite pronoun 71
 er-: 117, 118, 183
 er: 235-238
 - adverb 96
 - locative 237
 - object pronoun 56, 236
 - partitive 236
 - passive 163
 - position in sentence 96, 235-238
 - pronominal 171, 236
 - repletive 235
 - with prepositions 56
 ergens:
 - as adverb 108
 - pronominal use of 71
 feminine endings: 41
 - *e* 41
 - *es* 41
 - *esse* 42
 - *euse* 42
 - *in* 42
 - *ster* 42
 - *trice* 42
 for:
 - *voor* 15, 97
 - with adverbs of time 97
 (the) former ..., the latter: 26
 fractions: 227
 future:
 - formation of 119
 - use of 124
 gaan:
 - future tense 119
 - past tenses 124
 - present tense 114
 - without *te* 155
 gans:
 - before *de* 91
 ge-:
 - nominal prefix 30
 - past participle prefix 117-118, 181, 182
 - verbal prefix 117, 183
 geen: 241
 - with adjective 74
 geheel:
 - before *de* 91
 gender: 27-33
 - of abbreviations 260
 - common 27
 - of compound nouns 32
 - neuter 30
 - nouns with two genders 32
 gene:
 - with *deze* 26
 genitive: see 'cases'
 gerund: 168
 gij: 53
 - object form 53
 - possessive form 53
 - use of 53

- verb forms 53, 113, 120, 137, 139
- graag*: 93, 149, 153
- grave accent: 14
- half: 227
- hangen*:
 - past tenses 133
 - replacing 'to be' 146, 235
- hebben*:
 - as auxiliary 117, 128, 142
 - forms 137
 - imperfect 122
 - uses of 138, 157
- heel*:
 - before *de* 91
- heen*:
 - as adverb 108
 - with prepositions 219
- height: 233
- hen*:
 - object pronoun 50
 - use of 53
- her*: 117, 118, 183
- het*:
 - definite article 22
 - object pronoun 50, 56, 148
 - omission of 22
 - position in sentence 96, 171
 - prefix 91
 - subject pronoun 50, 54
 - with impersonal verbs 178, 238
 - with modals, verb implied 148
 - with reflexive pronouns 171
- hetgeen*:
 - indefinite pronoun 70
 - relative pronoun 66
- hetwelk*: 67
- hier*:
 - adverb 106
 - position of negative 240
 - replacing 'this' 62
- historical personages: 259
- hoe*: 109, 121, 203, 230
- hoeven*:
 - use of 151
 - with *te* 154
- horen*: 152, 155
- hun*:
 - object pronoun 50, 53
 - possessive pronoun 58
 - subject pronoun 50
 - use of 53
- hyphen: 16
 - in compound words 90
 - with adjectives of nationality 90
- if: 124, 193
- ij*: 15
- imperative: 158

- forms 158
- use of 158
- with *laten* 153, 159
- imperfect:
 - continuous 165
 - formation of 115
 - use of 122
- impersonal:
 - constructions replacing passives 164
 - verbs 178
- indefinite article: 21
 - case remnants 21
 - omission of 21
- indefinite pronouns: 66, 68-72
 - a few 71
 - all 71
 - anybody, -one 69
 - anything 69
 - both 70
 - *ergens* 71
 - everybody, -one 68
 - followed by relative clause 64, 72
 - many 70
 - *nergens* 71
 - nobody, -one 69
 - nothing 64, 71
 - one 68, 165
 - others 70
 - *overal* 71
 - several 70
 - some 70
 - somebody, -one 69
 - something 69
 - various 70
 - whatever 69, 203
 - whoever 69, 203
- infinitive: 154-158
 - as imperative 154
 - as noun 30, 158
 - as present participle 169
 - clauses replacing -ing forms 168
 - double 148
 - gender of 30
 - of modals as past participles 148
 - replacing passive constructions 164
 - with *om... te* 157
 - with *te* 154
- inflexion:
 - adjectives 74, 91
 - comparatives 75, 78
 - adjectives in compound nouns 90
 - past participles as adjectives 118
 - possessive pronouns 59
 - superlatives 79
- inseparable:
 - prefixes 182
 - verbs 182

- interrogatives:
 - as conjunctions 203
 - adverbs 109
 - inversion of verb + subject 113
 - pronouns 72
 - what 73, 203
 - which 73, 203
 - who 72, 203
 - whom 72, 203
 - whose 72
- intransitive verbs: 177
 - auxiliary *hebben* or *zijn* 177
- irregular verbs: 136
 - *hebben* 137
 - list of 125
 - *zijn* 139
- it:
 - as *hem* 56
 - as *het* 50, 54-56
 - as *hij* 50, 54-56
 - as *zij, ze* 50, 54-56
 - object pronoun 56
 - subject pronoun 54
 - with prepositions 56, 236
- ij* 50, 52
 - possessive form 58, 60
 - use of 52
- jullie*: 50-52
 - possessive form 51, 58, 60
 - unemphatic form 51
 - use of 51
- just:
 - adverb 104
- komen*:
 - past tenses 132
 - present tense 114
 - without *te* 155
- kunnen*:
 - conditional perfect 150
 - contracted conditional 149
 - forms 146
 - use of 151
- laten*
 - as auxiliary 156, 177
 - in imperative 153, 159
 - use of 156, 177
 - without *te* 155
- least:
 - at least 93
- length: 233
- less: 93
- letters: 244-247
 - address 244
 - date 244
 - endings 245
 - expressions 246
 - titles 244
 - writing of 244-247

- liggen*:
 - past tenses 132
 - present tense 113
 - replacing 'to be' 146, 235
- lopen*:
 - past tenses 133
 - replacing 'to be' 146, 235
 - verb of motion 144
- maar*:
 - conjunction 190
- main clause:
 - use of comma 18
- measurements: 233
- men*:
 - object form of 68
 - possessive pronoun 68
 - reflexive pronoun 68
 - replaced by *je, ze* 52, 165
 - replacing passive 165
- meneer*:
 - followed by *de* 24
 - capital letter 16
 - use of 16
 - in letters 244
- met/mee/mede*:
 - after adjectives 81
 - after verbs 186
 - conjunction 202
 - prepositions 210
 - separable prefix 180
- mevrouw*:
 - capital letter 16
 - followed by *de* 24
 - in letters 244
- might: 153
- mixed verbs: 136
 - list of 125, 134
- modal verbs: 146-153
 - contracted conditionals 149
 - forms of 146
 - *kunnen* 146, 149-151
 - list of 135
 - *moeten* 147, 149-151
 - *mogen* 147, 149-153, 246
 - passive voice 163
 - perfect tenses of 148
 - use of 150-153
 - *willen* 147-149, 153
 - *zullen* 119, 153
- moeten*:
 - conditional perfect 150
 - contracted conditional 149
 - forms 147
 - negative of (*hoeven*) 151
 - use of 151
- mogen*:
 - contracted conditional 149

- forms 147
- use of 152
- money: 229
- months: 101, 231
- mood:
 - imperative 158
 - subjunctive 160
- more:
 - comparative of adjectives 78
 - comparative of adverbs 92
- most:
 - superlative of adjectives 79
 - superlative of adverbs 93
- naar*:
 - after verbs 186
 - conjunction 193, 198
 - preposition 210
 - with adverbs of direction 106
- naartoe*:
 - as adverb 106, 220
- nationality:
 - adjectives of 248-253
 - comparative of 78
 - countries 248-253
 - feminine 84
 - formation of adjective 86
 - inhabitants 248-254
 - languages 248-253
 - spelling 16, 76, 90
 - superlative 80
- negation: 239-243
 - *geen* 241
 - *nergens* 243
 - *niet* 239
 - *nooit* 239
- neither ... nor: 200
- nergens*:
 - as adverb 108, 243
 - pronominal use of 71
- niet/nooit*:
 - position of 239
- noch ... noch*: 200
- nouns:
 - feminine endings 41
 - formed from adjectives 84
 - formed from verbs 31
 - gender of 27-33
 - infinitive used as 158
 - plural of 33-41
 - proper 248-259
 - singular in Dutch, plural in English 41
- now: 99
- numbers: see 'numerals'
- numerals: 222-235
 - age 228
 - arithmetic 228
 - cardinal 222

- dates 231
- diminutive 49, 224
- fractions 227
- measures 233
- money 229
- ordinal 225
- playing cards 234
- telephone numbers 225
- temperature 228
- time 230
- weights 232
- object pronouns: 50-58
 - *die* 50, 57
 - *hen* 50, 53
 - *hun* 50, 53
 - *it* 50, 54-57
- of:
 - omission of 221
- of*:
 - co-ordinating conjunction 190
 - subordinating conjunction 193, 225
- of... of*: 200
- ofwel/oftewel*: 191
- om*:
 - after adjectives 81
 - after verbs 186
 - inseparable prefix 182
 - preposition 211
 - separable prefix 180
 - with time 230
- om... te*: 157, 201
- omdat*: 192
- onder*:
 - after adjectives 81
 - after verbs 187
 - inseparable prefix 182
 - preposition 211
 - separable prefix 180
- one*: see *men*
- ont-*: 117, 118, 184
- ook*:
 - position of 203, 232, 242
- op*:
 - after adjectives 81
 - after verbs 187
 - preposition 212
 - separable prefix 180
- over*:
 - after adjectives 81
 - after verbs 187
 - inseparable prefix 182
 - preposition 213
 - separable prefix 180
 - with time 230
- overal*:
 - as adverb 108
 - pronominal use of 71

- participles:
 - past - formation of 117
 - use of 67, 118, 159
 - present 67, 166, 169
 - used adjectivally 76, 78, 80, 85, 118, 166
 - used adverbially 167
 - used as imperative 159
 - used as nouns 74, 167
 - used as prepositions 167
- pas*:
 - = just 104
 - = not until 104, 242
 - = only 228
- passive: 161-165
 - action/state 162
 - contracted conditionals 164
 - formation of 161
 - impersonal rendered by infinitive 164
 - indirect object 163
 - perfect/pluperfect 162
 - tenses 161
 - with adjectival adjuncts 164
 - with *laten* 156
 - with modals 163
- perfect:
 - formation of 117
 - passive 162
 - use of 123
- personal pronouns: 50-58
 - unemphatic 50
- playing cards: 234
- pluperfect:
 - formation of 119
 - passive 162
 - use of 124
- plural:
 - after numerals 231, 232, 233
 - *-en* 36
 - *-en* and *-s* 34
 - *-eren* 39
 - irregular 40
 - of diminutives 35
 - of foreign words 35-41
 - of nouns 33-41
 - *-s* 34
 - spelling changes 36
 - vowel changes 36, 37
- possessive:
 - adjectives 58
 - pronouns 58
 - *'s* 42
- possessive pronouns: 58-61
 - colloquial 43, 59
 - demonstratives, use of 59
 - independent 60
 - inflection of 59
 - replaced by reflexives 60

- prefixes:
 - adjectival 87
 - *ge-* 117, 182
 - inseparable 183
 - separable 180
 - separable with *te* 157
 - verbal 179
- prepositional:
 - objects 185-189
 - phrases 217
 - prefixes 180, 184
- prepositions:
 - after adjectives 81
 - after verbs 185
 - diminutive 49
 - double 220
 - following nouns 181, 219
 - omission of 'of' 221
 - with *heen* 219
- present:
 - continuous 165
 - emphatic 166
 - formation of 112
 - participle 166
 - progressive 165
 - use of 121
- proberen*: 155
- pronouns: 50-73
 - demonstrative 61
 - indefinite 68
 - interrogative 72
 - object 50
 - personal 50
 - referential 57
 - possessive 58
 - reciprocal 176
 - reflexive 172
 - relative 62
 - subject 50
 - unemphatic 50
- pronunciation: 13
- proper nouns: 248-259
 - cities 255
 - countries 248
 - geographical 248
 - historical personages 259
 - inhabitants 248
 - languages 248
 - provinces 255
 - regions 257
 - rivers 257
- provinces:
 - Belgian 256
 - Dutch 255
 - other 257
- punctuation: 18
 - comma 18

- reflexive:
 - pronouns 60, 61, 68, 171-176
 - verbs 171
 - position of object 171
- regions: 257
- relative clauses: 62-68
 - replaced by adjectival adjuncts 67, 164
 - replacing -ing constructions 170
 - use of comma 18
 - word order in 64
- relative pronouns: 62-67
 - *dat* 63
 - *die* 63
 - *hetgeen* 66, 67
 - *hetwelk* 67
 - indefinite antecedents 64
 - independent 66
 - preceded by preposition 63
 - *welk(s)* 65, 67
 - whose 65
 - *wiens/wier* 65
- rivers: 257
- seasons: 99
- separable:
 - prefixes 179
 - position of 157, 180
 - verbs 179-181
 - position of *te* 157
 - tenses of 180
 - with prepositions 220
- should:
 - conditional 149, 150
- sommige*:
 - indefinite pronoun 70
- spelling: 14-17
 - accents 14
 - apostrophe 15, 35, 42
 - capital letters; see also 'capital letters'
 - hyphen 16
 - days and months 231
 - diaeresis 16, 35, 37
 - medial sounds 16
 - new trends 17, 254
 - syllabic division 17
- staan*:
 - continuous tenses 154, 165
 - past tenses 135
 - present tense 114
 - replacing 'to be' 146, 235
- stress: 13
 - adjectival endings 84
 - months of the year 231
 - shift in compound words 90
 - verbal prefixes 180, 182
- strong verbs: 112
 - classes of 125-133
 - future 119
 - imperfect 116
 - list of 125-133
 - past participles 118
 - as adjectives 118
 - perfect 117
 - pluperfect 119
- subject pronouns: 50
 - *die* 57
 - *gij* 53
 - *it* 54
 - *jij* 53
 - *jullie* 51, 53
 - *men* 52, 165
 - *u* 52
- subjunctive
 - formation of 160
 - of *hebben* 138
 - use of 160
 - of *zijn* 140
- subordinate:
 - clauses - use of comma 18
 - word order in 97, 192
 - conjunctions 192-198
- suffixes:
 - adjectival 84, 89
 - adverbial 110
 - *-eren* 116, 117
 - feminine 41
- superlative:
 - absolute 80
 - adverbs 92
 - compound adjectives 80
 - formation of 79, 92
 - inflection of 79, 92
 - use of 78, 80, 93
 - with *meest* 79, 93
- syntax:
 - after co-ordinating conjunctions 97, 190
 - after subordinating conjunctions 97, 192
 - direct + indirect objects 58
 - in relative clauses 63
 - order of verbs in passive 164
 - position of *er* - see *er*
 - position of infinitives 154
 - position of *niet/nooit* 239
 - position of object with reflexive verbs 171
 - position of *ook* 203, 242
 - position of preposition with *er* 56, 236
 - position of preposition with *waar* 63, 73
 - position of separable prefixes 180
 - position of verbs in compound tenses - see 'tense' and respective tenses
 - predicative adjectives and prepositions 81
 - with adverbs 95, 199
- te*:
 - *om... te* 157
 - preposition 214
 - replacing-ing clauses 168
 - *ten, ter* 20, 217
 - use of 154-158
 - with separable prefixes 158, 181
- tegen*:
 - after adjectives 81
 - after verbs 187
 - preposition 214
 - separable prefix 180
 - with time 230
- temperature: 228
- tense: 112-125
 - conditional 120, 124
 - conditional perfect 120, 125
 - continuous 165
 - emphatic 166
 - formation of 112-121
 - future 119, 124
 - imperfect 115, 122
 - perfect 117, 123
 - pluperfect 119, 124
 - present 112, 121
 - present continuous 165
 - present emphatic 166
 - progressive 165
 - use of 121-125
- time: 230
 - adverbs of 95
 - expressions of 98-106
- 't kofschip*: 115
- toch*: 191
- today: 98
- toen*:
 - adverb 105
 - conjunction 122, 193
- tomorrow: 98
- tot/toe*:
 - after adjectives 81
 - after *naar* 106, 219
 - after verbs 188
 - preposition 215
 - separable prefix 180
- transitive verbs: 177
 - auxiliary *hebben* 177
 - used reflexively 173
- u*: 50
 - possessive form 58
 - reflexive of 172
 - replaced by *jullie* 51
 - spelling 246
 - use of 52
 - verb forms 137, 139
- uit*:
 - after adjectives 81
 - after verbs 188
 - preposition 215
 - separable prefix 143, 180
- unemphatic pronouns: 50
- used to: 123, 135, 137
- veel*: 70, 77
 - indefinite pronoun 70
- ver*: 117, 118, 143, 182, 184
- verb: 112-189
 - auxiliaries - see *zijn* and *hebben*
 - imperatives 158
 - impersonal 178
 - -ing forms 166, 168
 - inseparable 182
 - intransitive 177
 - irregular 135, 136
 - mixed 134, 136
 - modals 135, 146-153
 - monosyllabic 114, 166
 - passive voice 161
 - position in relative clauses 62, 64
 - + prepositions 185-189
 - present participle 166
 - reflexive 171
 - separable 180
 - strong - see 'strong verbs'
 - subjunctive - see 'subjunctive'
 - tense - see 'tense'
 - transitive 177
 - weak - see 'weak verbs'
- vergeten*:
 - past tenses 132
 - with auxiliary 132, 145
- verscheidene*:
 - indefinite pronoun 70
- verschillende*:
 - indefinite pronoun 70
- voor*:
 - after adjectives 81
 - after verbs 188
 - inseparable prefix 182
 - preposition 217
 - separable prefix 180
 - with time 97, 230
- voorkeurspelling*: 14, 17
- waar*:
 - interrogative 73, 203
 - relative 63
- wanneer*:
 - conjunction 105, 193
 - interrogative 109, 203
- want*:
 - conjunction 190
- weak verbs: 112
 - future 119
 - imperfect 115
 - perfect 117
 - pluperfect 119
- weights: 232

- wel:
- emphatic 166
 - opposite of *niet* 243
 - with *zullen* 153
- weten:
- past tenses 135
 - with *te* 155
- wezen: see *zijn*
- welk:
- interrogative 73, 203
 - relative 65, 67
- what:
- interrogative pronoun 73, 203
- whatever: 69, 203
- when: 193, 203
- which:
- interrogative pronoun 73, 203
 - relative pronoun 62, 64-67
- who/whom:
- interrogative pronoun 72, 203
 - relative pronoun 62, 66
- whoever: 69, 203
- whose:
- interrogative pronoun 72
 - relative pronoun 65
 - with preposition 65
- wie:
- interrogative 72, 203
 - relative pronoun 62-66
- will:
- future tense 119
 - = *willen* 124, 153
- willen:
- contracted conditional 149
 - forms 147
 - use of 153
- word order: see 'syntax'
- would:
- conditional 120, 149, 152, 153
 - conditional perfect 120, 125
 - imperfect 120, 123
- yesterday: 98
- you: 50-53
- zelf(de):
- emphatic 175
 - prefixed by *de, het* 91
- zich:
- independent 176
 - reflexive pronoun 171-175
- zichzelf:
- use of 175
- zien:
- present tense 114
 - past tenses 135
- zijn:
- as auxiliary 128, 140
 - forms of 139
 - imperfect 122
 - uses of 141
 - *wezen* 140, 156
 - with *weten* 155
- zitten:
- continuous tenses 154
 - idiomatic use of 157
 - past tenses 132
 - replacing 'to be' 146, 235
- z'n:
- in adverbial expressions 51, 110, 224
 - possessive 43, 51, 58, 59
 - relative 65, 66
- z'n eigen:
- as reflexive 176
- zullen:
- conditional 120, 124
 - future perfect 119, 124
 - future tense 119, 124
 - past tenses 135
 - use of 153

Recommended texts for future reference

- Apeldoorn, C.G.L. *Afkortingenlexicon*
Spectrum, Utrecht, 2nd ed. 1976
- Coninck, R.H.B. de *Groot Uitspraakwoordenboek van de Nederlandse Taal*
De Nederlandse Boekhandel, Antwerp 1970
- Hermkens, H.M. *Spelling en Interpunctie*
Malmberg, Den Bosch
- Hertog, C.H. den *Nederlandse Spraakkunst* – bewerkt door H. Hulshof
Versluys, Amsterdam
- Kruyskamp, C. *(Van Dales) Groot Woordenboek der Nederlandse Taal*
Martinus Nijhoff, The Hague, 10th ed. 1976
- Rijpma, E. and Schuringa, F.G. *Nederlandse Spraakkunst*
Wolters-Noordhoff, Groningen, 1969
- Shetter, W.Z. *Introduction to Dutch*
Martinus Nijhoff, The Hague, 4th ed. – 4th impression 1981
- Smit, J. and Meijer, R. *Dutch Grammar and Reader*
Stanley Thornes, London, 1976
- Tacx, J.P.M. *Nederlandse Spraakkunst voor Iedereen*
Spectrum, Utrecht, 10th ed. 1978
- Toorn, M.C. van den *Nederlandse Grammatica*
Tjeenk Willink, Groningen, 1976
- Vooy's, C.G.N. de *Nederlandse Spraakkunst*
Wolters-Noordhoff, Groningen, 7th ed. 1967
- Woordenlijst van de Nederlandse Taal*
Martinus Nijhoff, The Hague, 1954
- Zandvoort, R.W. *A Handbook of English Grammar*
Wolters-Noordhoff, Groningen, 5th edition 1969